The Gospel of Jesus the Nazarene: According to the Hidden Tradition of Seth PART 1

An Apophatic Sethian Gnostic Historical and Biographical Gospel

THE RENEWED GOSPEL

Dedication..... 22
Copyright & License.....26
Preface.....28
Chapter One..... 33
The Hidden Beginning.....33
Chapter Two..... 39
The Carpenter's Workshop.....39
Chapter Three..... 46
Beyond Damascus.....46
Chapter Four..... 53
The Mystery of the Unknown Father.....54
Chapter Five..... 61
The Brahma Kings Who Mistook Themselves for God....62
Chapter Six..... 73
The Secret Cosmology.....74
Chapter Seven.....89
The Return of the Nazarene.....90
The Road Through Persia..... 92
The Return to Damascus.....94
The News from Galilee.....97
Chapter Eight..... 106
The Kingdom Within..... 106
The Christ Is a State of Awakening..... 109
Know Yourself..... 114
The Two Become One..... 117
The Child and the Kingdom..... 119
The Living and the Dead..... 121
The Kingdom Spread Upon the Earth..... 123
Chapter Nine.....127

The Hidden Sayings..... 127
Seek Until You Find..... 129
The Lion and the Human..... 131
The Splinter and the Beam..... 133
The Light Within..... 135
The Solitary Ones..... 137
The World as a Corpse..... 138
Become Passersby..... 141
The Empty Jar..... 142
The Beginning and the End..... 144
The Image and the Light..... 145
The Saying About Becoming Christ..... 147
Chapter Ten..... 150
The Mystery of the Bridal Chamber..... 151
The Visible and the Invisible..... 153
The Bridal Chamber..... 154
The Marriage of Wisdom and Compassion..... 156
The Chrism..... 159
The Mirror..... 161
The Companion..... 163
Names Are Given to the Living..... 165
The Sacrament of Recognition..... 167
The Chamber Within..... 169
The Greatest Mystery..... 171
Chapter Eleven..... 174
The Living Water..... 174
The Woman at the Well..... 175
The Water That Does Not Remain in the Jar..... 179

The Five Husbands..... 181
The Religion of Thirst..... 184
The Beggar and the Priest.....186
The Letter and the Water..... 188
The River and the Self..... 190
Resurrection and Continuity.....193
The Spring Beneath the Temple..... 195
The Last Cup..... 198
Chapter Twelve.....201
The Prison of the Mind.....201
The Prisoner Without Walls.....203
The Archons Within..... 204
The Seven Chains.....206
Fear.....208
Craving..... 210
Hatred..... 212
Pride.....214
Shame..... 216
Possession.....217
Ignorance..... 218
The Collective Dream.....221
The Pharisees Who Opposed Him.....222
The Door Without a Guard.....224
Chapter Thirteen.....227
The Seven Archons.....227
The First Archon: The Ruler of Fear.....229
The Second Archon: The Ruler of Desire..... 231
The Third Archon: The Ruler of Hatred.....233

The Fourth Archon: The Ruler of False Identity.....235
The Fifth Archon: The Ruler of Authority.....238
The Sixth Archon: The Ruler of Certainty.....239
The Seventh Archon: The Ruler of Forgetfulness.....241
The Heavens of the Rulers.....242
The God of Israel and the Brahma Realm.....245
Above Every God.....248
The Archon Who Pretends to Be Christ.....250
The Secret Sign.....252
Chapter Fourteen.....255
The Law and Freedom.....255
The Purpose of Law.....259
The Man with the Injured Hand.....261
The Letter and the Spirit.....263
The Adulterous Woman.....265
Purity.....268
The Burden of the Fathers.....270
The Law Written Within.....272
The Two Errors.....273
The Debate Concerning Resurrection.....274
The Seed and the Field.....277
The Greater Commandment.....279
The Freedom of the Son of Seth.....280
The Road to Jerusalem.....282
Chapter Fifteen.....285
The Temple Within.....286
The House of God.....287
The Table.....289

The Challenge....292
The Brahma King....295
Destroy This Temple....297
The Temple of the Body....298
The Three Temples....300
The Priests and the Archon....302
The Authority of Conscience....305
The Faction Meets....307
The Nazarene and Judas....309
The True Offering....315
Chapter Sixteen....318
Judas and the Secret Commission....318
The Disciples Dispute....320
The God Each Disciple Worshiped....322
The Laughing Nazarene....325
Judas Questions the Plan....327
The Condemned Thief....331
The Meal of Remembrance....333
The Cup....335
The Sign of Friendship....337
The Prayer in the Garden....340
The Arrest....343
Before the Authorities....346
The Roman Judgment....347
The Prisoner Beside Him....349
Judas Waits....350
Toward the Cross....351
Chapter Seventeen....353

The Mystery of the Cross.....353
The Two Who Followed..... 354
The Hill.....355
The Veil Descends..... 356
The Substitution.....359
The Crucified Accusers..... 362
The Nazarene Who Laughed..... 364
The Cry from the Cross..... 366
The Women at a Distance.....367
The Death of the Image..... 369
The Road Away..... 370
Judas Receives the Sign.....372
The Empty Tomb That Was Not Empty..... 374
The Meaning of the Cross..... 375
Chapter Eighteen..... 378
The Road to the East.....378
The Name of the Rescued Man..... 381
The Hidden Communities of Syria.....383
News from Jerusalem..... 386
Judas Arrives..... 389
The Gospel of Judas..... 391
The Question of the Resurrection.....393
The Sun of Seth..... 395
The Sun Is Not the Source.....399
The Decision to Continue East..... 400
The Eastern Road Opens Again.....403
Chapter Nineteen..... 405
The Gospel Beyond the Empire..... 406

The City of Many Gods....407
The Teacher of Fire....410
News of the New Religion....412
The Gospel of the Living Nazarene....416
The Brahmin and the Nazarene....418
The God Beyond Brahma....420
The Debate Concerning the Self....422
The Christ Without Ownership....424
Judas Departs....426
The Witness Remains....429
The Gospel Written in Lives....431
The Disappearance from History....432
The Last Teaching in the City....434
Chapter Twenty....438
The Kingdom Without a King....438
The Question of the Kingdom....439
Within and Between....442
The Temptation of the Good King....444
The Benevolent Archon....447
The Community of Equals....449
The Rich Man Returns....451
The Poor Are Not Symbols....454
The Christ and Society....455
The Kingdom and the Brahma Gods....457
The Kingdom Is Spread Out....458
The Return of Thomas....460
The Living Sayings....462
The King Who Lives Inside....464

The Three Revolutions..... 465
No King but Awakening..... 467
The Last Visit of the Witness.....468
The Kingdom in the Kitchen..... 470
The Hidden Kingdom..... 472
The Sun at Evening.....474
Chapter Twenty-One.....477
The Unbegotten Light.....477
The Invisible Spirit..... 479
Not This..... 481
The Teacher Who Changes.....484
The First Thought..... 485
The Mother and the Father..... 488
The Great Depth..... 490
The Silence Before God..... 491
The Vision of Light.....493
Beyond the Creator.....496
Yaldabaoth Within..... 498
The Salvation of the Gods..... 499
The Solar Seth Reconsidered.....500
The Christ Reconsidered..... 503
The Offended Disciple.....504
The Last Idol.....507
The Unbegotten..... 508
The Prayer Without Words..... 511
Chapter Twenty-Two..... 514
The Death of the Nazarene.....514
The Aging Body..... 515

The Return of the Old Question..... 517
Mariam Comes East.....519
What Happened in the West..... 521
The Name Above Every Name.....523
The Temptation After Victory..... 525
Thomas and the Final Sayings.....526
The Gospel and the Living Voice..... 528
The Last Meeting with the Witness..... 529
The Witness Dies.....532
The Question of Grief.....534
The Final Illness..... 535
The Last Questions..... 536
The Last Temptation of the Disciple..... 538
Mariam's Question.....540
The Final Teaching..... 542
The Setting Sun..... 544
The Ordinary Death.....546
The Tomb in the East.....547
After the Nazarene.....549
The Last Saying.....550
Chapter Twenty-Three..... 554
The Communities of the Stranger..... 555
The First Gathering.....556
The Problem of Scripture..... 558
The Gospel According to Memory.....560
The Four Streams.....561
The Followers of the Cross.....563
A Letter from the West..... 565

The Dispute About Judas.....567
The Manuscript of Judas.....569
The Gospel of Philip.....571
The Meaning of the Bridal Chamber.....572
The Solar Communities.....574
Seth the Stranger.....575
The New Archons.....577
Gnosis and Power.....578
The Hylic Error.....579
The Archon of Spiritual Superiority.....581
The Gospel of Service.....582
The Book of the Stranger.....584
The Three Errors.....585
The Memory of the Nazarene.....586
The Last Council of Thomas.....588
The Human Revealer.....589
The Christ in Everyone.....591
The Sun Rises Without Permission.....592
The Religion That Must Die.....594
The Hidden Seed.....595
Chapter Twenty-Four.....599
The War of the Gospels.....599
The Gospel of the Cross.....600
The Question of Luke.....602
The Birth Without a Miracle.....604
The Human Scandal.....606
The First Burning.....607
The Archon of Orthodoxy.....609

The Council of the Hidden Communities.....610
The Three Libraries..... 611
The Gospel According to Moshe Reed.....612
The Sayings of Thomas..... 613
The Mysteries of Philip..... 615
The Empty Grave Religion.....616
The Resurrection Debate..... 617
The God Above God.....619
The Danger of Hatred..... 621
The Sun and the Stranger.....622
The First Imperial Interest..... 623
The Dream of the Emperor.....624
The Second Crucifixion.....625
The Hidden Copyists..... 627
The Gospel as Mirror.....628
The Coming Silence..... 629
The War Without Armies.....631
The Last Lamp.....633
Chapter Twenty-Five..... 637
The Empire of the Crucified Image.....637
The Sign Above the Army.....638
The Cross Changes Meaning.....639
The Council of the Victorious Church.....641
The Nature of the Nazarene.....642
The Captured Christ.....644
The Emperor's Jesus..... 645
The Gospel of Power..... 647
The First Imperial Heretic..... 648

The Destruction of the Temples....650
The Hidden Sethians....651
The Theology of Escape....653
The Canon Closes....655
The Gospel That Could Not Enter....656
The Religion About Jesus....658
The Archon in the Basilica....659
The Christian Yaldabaoth....661
The Conversion of the Archon....662
The Last Public Debate....663
The Prison Teaching....665
The Religion Goes Underground....667
The Gospel Without a Name....668
The Emperor Dies....670
The Dream of Mariam....671
The Seed Travels East....672
The Gospel Meets Emptiness....673
The Return to Apophasis....674
The Last Imperial Edict....676
The Burial of the Books....677
The Empire of the Image....679
The Unconquered Stranger....681
The Sun Behind the Basilica....682
Chapter Twenty-Six....685
The Return of the Buried Word....685
The Long Silence....686
The Gospel Beneath the Gospel....688
The Monks of Unknowing....689

The God Beyond God Returns..... 690
The Return of the East..... 691
The Brahma Question..... 692
The Error of the Highest Being..... 694
The Discovery of the Sayings..... 695
The Return of Judas..... 696
The Problem of the Historical Jesus..... 697
The Moshe Reed Witness..... 698
The Question of Myth..... 699
The Return of Christ..... 701
The Modern Archons..... 703
Yaldabaoth in the Machine..... 704
The New Hylicism..... 705
The Resurrection of the Dead..... 707
The Last Death..... 709
The Gospel Returns..... 710
The Honest Gospel..... 711
The Nazarene Returns Without Returning..... 712
The Unfinished Gospel..... 714
The Reader Becomes the Witness..... 715
The Word Beneath the Earth..... 717
The Dawn After Centuries..... 718
Chapter Twenty-Seven..... 721
The Seven Veils of the Archons..... 721
The First Veil: Fear..... 723
The Nazarene and Fear..... 725
The Second Veil: Desire..... 727
The Marketplace of Gnosis..... 729

The Third Veil: Identity..... 730
The Names of the Self..... 731
The Identity of Christ..... 733
The Fourth Veil: Authority..... 735
The Teacher Must Disappear..... 736
The Fifth Veil: Certainty..... 737
The Certainty of the Heretic..... 739
The Sixth Veil: Separation..... 740
The Bridal Chamber of Difference..... 742
The Seventh Veil: Spiritual Pride..... 743
The Pneumatic Narcissist..... 744
The Seven Veils Together..... 746
The Inner Demiurge..... 747
The Archon of Trauma..... 749
The Archon of Revenge..... 750
The Archon of Despair..... 752
The Nazarene's Hope..... 753
The Method of Liberation..... 754
The Seven Practices..... 756
The Solar Practice..... 757
The Descent Through the Archons..... 759
The Gnostic Who Returned..... 760
The Final Archon..... 761
Beyond the Seven Veils..... 763
The Stranger Passes Through..... 765

Reverend Moshe Reed, Servant and Prophet of Logos

THE SOLAR SETH, *The Eternal Stranger and Living Image of the Awakened Christ*

Dedication

To the Strangers in every age—

to those who questioned the rulers
without becoming rulers themselves,

to those who searched for the Living One
among the living rather than among the dead,

to those who refused to confuse the image of God
with the Nameless Mystery beyond every image,

to those who discovered that awakening
cannot be inherited, purchased, commanded, or possessed,

to those who crossed deserts, mountains, borders,
religions, philosophies, and worlds of thought
in search of what no single tradition can contain,

to Judas, the misunderstood,

to Thomas, the questioner,

to Philip, the keeper of the Bridal Chamber,

to Mariam, the witness of wisdom,

to Seth, the eternal Stranger,

and to Jesus the Nazarene,
the human teacher who walked beneath the sun,

who refused the throne prepared for him,
who taught that the Christ is not the possession of one person,
but a possibility hidden within every conscious being.

And finally,

to the reader—

May you question even this Gospel.

May you pass beyond every image that demands worship.

May you recognize the archon within before condemning the archon outside.

May you enter the Bridal Chamber of wisdom and compassion.

May you undergo the Last Death while still living.

May you become a Stranger to everything false within yourself.

And when every name has fallen silent,

may you stand before the Nameless Source

without throne,
without fear,
without certainty,
and without separation.

For the Light belongs to no ruler.
The Christ belongs to no institution.
The Stranger belongs to no world.
And the Truth belongs to no book—
not even this one.

Copyright & License

The Gospel of Jesus the Nazarene PART 1
Copyright © 2026 by The Logos / Moshe Reed
ISBN:

This book is intended for informational, educational, and spiritual purposes only. It does not provide medical, legal, or professional advice and makes no claims to prevent, treat, or cure any disease or condition. Readers should consult a qualified professional for any health or legal concerns.

This work is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 4.0 International License.

To view a copy of this license, visit:
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/

This means you are free to:
* **Share** — copy and redistribute the material in any medium or format
* **Adapt** — remix, transform, and build upon the material

for any purpose, even commercially.

The licensor cannot revoke these freedoms as long as you follow the license terms.

Under the following terms:
* **Attribution** — You must give appropriate credit, credit must be given to the Logos. Provide a link to the license, and indicate if changes were made. You may do so in any reasonable manner, but not in any way that suggests the licensor endorses you or your use.
* **ShareAlike** — If you remix, transform, or build upon the material, you must distribute your contributions under the same license as the original.

An apophatic Sethian Gospel of the hidden life of Jesus the Nazarene, revealing the Christ as a universal state of awakened consciousness and the path beyond gods, archons, false identity, and death toward the Nameless Source.

Preface

Grace be unto those who seek, and peace unto those who are willing to surrender certainty for wisdom.

Many books have been written concerning Jesus of Nazareth. Some proclaim him as the unique and only Christ. Others remember him as a prophet, a philosopher, a revolutionary, or a miracle-worker. Still others have clothed him in doctrines fashioned by kings, councils, and empires. Every generation has painted his face according to its own imagination.

This book does not seek to add another idol to that collection.

Rather, it seeks to remove idols.

For the Hidden Father cannot be imprisoned within doctrines, nor can Truth be enclosed within the walls of any religion. Every name points beyond itself. Every image conceals as much as it reveals. Every scripture becomes an idol whenever it claims to exhaust the Infinite Mystery.

Thus this Gospel belongs to the apophatic tradition of Sethian Gnosis.

It speaks of the Ineffable One beyond being and non-being; beyond existence and nonexistence; beyond light and darkness; beyond every thought that can arise within the human mind. Before every god, before every aeon, before every heaven, before every beginning, there is only the

Nameless Source whom no tongue can describe and no intellect can comprehend.

From that Silence proceeds the Fullness.

From the Fullness come the Aeons.

From ignorance comes the rulers.

From wisdom comes liberation.

This Gospel therefore distinguishes between the Ultimate Mystery and those lesser rulers who mistake themselves for the Highest. The God worshiped by many nations—including the God known through the ancient covenant of Israel—is presented not as the Absolute Reality itself, but as a mighty ruler within the realm of becoming: sincere in justice according to his understanding, yet limited, finite, and veiled by his own incompleteness. Like the Brahma gods described by eastern sages, he mistakes the brilliance of his own heaven for the Infinite beyond all heavens.

Above every throne remains the Father whom no throne contains.

The Nazarene came not to reconcile humanity to an angry deity, but to awaken sleeping minds from the prison of ignorance. His message was not primarily about forgiveness through sacrifice, but about liberation through knowledge, compassion, humility, and direct realization of the Living Light.

He taught that "Christ" is not the possession of one individual.

Christ is awakening.

Christ is the flowering of the Divine Image within every soul.

Whoever awakens becomes a bearer of the Christ. Whoever knows the Hidden Father through direct participation enters the anointing that no human authority can bestow and no earthly power can remove.

For this reason the Nazarene repeatedly discouraged his disciples from worshiping his person. He directed them instead toward the Light that shone through him and through all who awaken.

This work therefore departs intentionally from many familiar traditions.

It contains no virgin birth.

It proclaims no bodily resurrection.

It does not present salvation as escape through belief alone.

Instead, it reveals a hidden tradition in which the Nazarene survives the execution prepared for him. Through the ministry of heavenly messengers, he and the innocent thief are secretly delivered while those responsible for condemning the Just One unknowingly receive the fate they had prepared for another. To the crowds the appearance remains unchanged, for

the archons rule through appearances. Yet Truth quietly departs beyond their grasp.

The Nazarene then journeys eastward once more, teaching among seekers, monks, and sages until the completion of his earthly pilgrimage.

His final victory is not conquest over death by returning to flesh, but freedom from every chain of ignorance, attachment, fear, and becoming.

Likewise, this Gospel unveils the ancient mystery of Seth.

Seth is not merely the third son of Adam remembered by genealogy. He is the Heavenly Human, the Solar Revealer, the eternal image through whom the Hidden Father continually awakens worlds. Across the ages he appears under many names, assuming forms suitable for each generation. In this revelation, Jesus the Nazarene is disclosed as the latest earthly manifestation of the eternal Seth, whose visible symbol is the life-giving Sun that shines impartially upon the just and the unjust alike.

Yet even this revelation must not become another prison.

For language is only a finger pointing toward the moon.

The wise do not cling to the finger.

This Gospel draws together sayings preserved in the Gospel of Thomas, the Gospel of Philip, the Gospel of Judas, the Gospel according to Luke as purified through hidden

tradition, and the testimony preserved in *The Gospel According to Prophet Moshe Reed*, wherein the Nazarene is portrayed as a teacher of apophatic contemplation, compassion, disciplined labor, liberation from attachment, and the Infinite Light beyond every name. Their voices are woven here into a single narrative—not as a historical reconstruction, but as sacred myth, contemplative scripture, and mystical testimony.

Read, therefore, without haste.

Believe nothing merely because it is written.

Reject nothing merely because it is unfamiliar.

Test every saying in the silence of contemplation, in the practice of compassion, and in the freedom that comes when certainty loosens its grip upon the soul.

If these pages become another idol, lay them aside.

If they awaken humility, mercy, courage, and wonder before the Infinite Mystery, then let them accompany you for a little while upon the Way.

May the Hidden Father beyond all names illumine your seeking.

May Barbelo grant wisdom.

May the Living Seth awaken within you.

May the Christ become not merely someone whom you admire, but the living consciousness into which you yourself are invited.

Peace to all who seek the Light beyond every image.

Chapter One

The Hidden Beginning

In the days when Judea groaned beneath Rome, and the priests disputed endlessly concerning the Law, there appeared no sign in the heavens to announce the coming of the Nazarene.

No star halted above Bethlehem.

No choir of angels sang before shepherds.

No kings journeyed bearing treasures.

The Infinite Father, who transcends all images and wonders, requires no spectacle to reveal the Light.

Thus Jesus the Nazarene entered the world as every child enters the world: through the travail of a mother and the labor of ordinary life.

Mary, remembered among her neighbors for gentleness rather than greatness, bore him after the manner appointed to all humanity. Joseph, a builder whose hands had grown rough from shaping timber and stone, received the child not as a miracle that separated him from mankind, but as a gift entrusted to faithful care.

For the Hidden Father delights in humility.

The child grew among laborers.

He learned the weight of wood before he learned the weight of words.

He measured beams before measuring doctrines.

He repaired broken tables before seeking to repair broken hearts.

And those who knew him in those years perceived nothing extraordinary except an uncommon serenity that neither praise nor insult could easily disturb.

Some later asked:

"Why does this Gospel reject tales of miraculous birth?"

The elder who preserved these writings answered:

"Because those who require marvels before recognizing holiness have not yet understood holiness."

Again he said:

"The wheat does not become sacred because lightning struck the field. It becomes sacred because it nourishes the hungry."

So also was the Nazarene.

He did not descend from the clouds to escape humanity.

He entered humanity completely.

For only one who fully shares the human condition can reveal the path beyond its illusions.

As the child matured, Joseph instructed him in the craft of building.

The old builder would often say,

"Measure twice before cutting once, for haste wastes both timber and patience."

The boy treasured these words.

Years afterward he declared to his disciples,

"The one who judges quickly cuts crookedly."

Thus the wisdom of the workshop became the wisdom of the soul.

When Jesus had reached sufficient strength, Joseph entrusted him with difficult tasks.

Together they raised roofs after storms.

They rebuilt walls shattered by winter rains.

They fashioned doors that welcomed strangers.

They accepted payment from the wealthy, yet often repaired the homes of widows without charge.

When questioned concerning such generosity, Joseph replied,

"A house shelters the poor as faithfully as the rich."

Jesus remembered this throughout his life.

He would later teach,

"The measure of a kingdom is not its palaces but whether the least among its people sleeps safely."

Now there were among the villages many teachers who boasted concerning heavenly mysteries.

Some argued over genealogies reaching back to Adam.

Others debated angels they had never seen.

Still others condemned one another with perfect confidence.

The young Nazarene listened quietly.

When they had finished disputing, he asked Joseph,

"Who among them is correct?"

Joseph continued smoothing a cedar beam before answering.

"When craftsmen argue over whose hammer is finest while the roof collapses above them, what should the wise builder repair first?"

"The roof," answered Jesus.

Joseph smiled.

"Remember this."

Many years later, the disciples recalled this conversation when the Teacher said,

"Doctrine exists for compassion, not compassion for doctrine."

One evening an elderly traveler from lands beyond Damascus rested in Joseph's workshop.

He spoke of vast kingdoms lying eastward.

He described mountains higher than imagination.

Monasteries hidden among forests.

Sages who sought silence instead of argument.

Kings who believed themselves gods.

And holy men who declared that even gods might still dwell within ignorance.

The young Nazarene listened until dawn.

When the traveler finished, Jesus asked only one question.

"What lies beyond the highest heaven?"

The old traveler laughed gently.

"If you discover the answer, return and teach even the teachers."

From that day a quiet longing awakened within him.

Not the desire to become famous.

Not the desire to rule.

Not even the desire to perform miracles.

Rather, he hungered for that Wisdom which no nation possesses completely, no scripture exhausts, and no language can perfectly express.

For the seed of Seth had already begun to awaken within the soul of the Nazarene, though its fullness remained hidden even from himself.

And the Invisible Father watched in silence, needing neither proclamation nor spectacle.

For Truth grows as a seed beneath the earth.

It announces itself not with noise, but with fruit.

Chapter Two

The Carpenter's Workshop

The years of the Nazarene's youth passed quietly, hidden from rulers and forgotten by chroniclers.

For the world records the triumphs of kings, yet Heaven remembers the faithfulness of unknown laborers.

Each morning before the sun rose above the hills of Galilee, Joseph would awaken his household.

Mary prepared simple bread.

Water was drawn from the well.

Prayers were offered—not as many words spoken to persuade Heaven, but as gratitude for another day in which compassion might become visible through honest labor.

Joseph would then shoulder his tools.

Jesus walked beside him.

The roads were dusty.

Their sandals wore thin.

Their hands became calloused.

Yet the Nazarene never complained concerning the labor.

For he later taught,

"The body grows weary through work, but the soul grows weary through idleness."

Many wondered why the Hidden Father had chosen no palace for the upbringing of the Revealer.

The elders answered:

"The Infinite Light prefers workshops to thrones, because pride seldom survives honest labor."

Joseph instructed his son not only in shaping wood, but in shaping character.

When a beam split unexpectedly, he did not curse.

He examined where the grain had turned.

When measurements proved mistaken, he corrected them without anger.

When customers delayed payment, he remained patient.

Jesus asked him,

"Father, why do you never rage against difficult people?"

Joseph replied,

"Because crooked timber becomes straighter more easily than an angry heart."

The saying remained with the Nazarene all his days.

One afternoon a wealthy merchant arrived carrying plans for an impressive estate.

He demanded the finest cedar and insisted the work be completed before its proper season.

Joseph examined the drawings carefully.

"The foundation is too shallow."

The merchant scoffed.

"I did not ask for your opinion."

Joseph answered gently,

"You hired my hands because you trusted my judgment."

The merchant refused to listen.

Another builder accepted the commission.

Within two winters the house leaned, and after the spring rains much of it collapsed.

The merchant returned in shame.

Joseph neither mocked nor condemned him.

Instead he gathered his tools and quietly rebuilt the foundation.

Watching this, Jesus asked,

"Why help the man who ignored your counsel?"

Joseph answered,

"If we rebuild only the homes of the grateful, many families shall remain without shelter."

Years later the Nazarene would say,

"Love your enemies, not because they deserve it, but because hatred rebuilds nothing."

As Jesus matured, travelers often rested beneath the shade beside Joseph's workshop.

Caravans journeying between Judea, Syria, Egypt, and lands farther east carried merchants, philosophers, physicians, monks, soldiers, shepherds, and pilgrims.

Joseph welcomed them all.

"The road belongs to everyone," he often said.

One evening a gray-haired scholar from Alexandria observed the young carpenter reading several worn scrolls after the day's work.

"You study after labor?" he asked.

Jesus smiled.

"The hands should not become wiser than the mind, nor the mind wiser than the heart."

The scholar questioned him concerning Moses.

Jesus answered thoughtfully.

He questioned him concerning Plato.

Jesus listened before replying.

He questioned him concerning the prophets.

Jesus quoted them with reverence.

Finally the old scholar asked,

"Which teacher do you consider greatest?"

The Nazarene remained silent for some time.

At last he said,

"The one who helps another awaken."

The scholar bowed his head.

"I have traveled many roads," he said, "yet few have answered so simply."

Thereafter rumors spread quietly that wisdom dwelt within the carpenter's house.

Yet Jesus discouraged admiration.

Whenever visitors praised his understanding, he handed them a hammer.

"Help us repair this roof," he would say.

Many departed.

Some remained.

Those who stayed discovered that conversation flowed more freely while hands were occupied.

For the Nazarene believed that labor humbles philosophy.

One winter a violent storm struck Galilee.

Roofs failed.

Olive trees split.

Several homes collapsed beneath the weight of rain.

Without waiting to be asked, Joseph and Jesus gathered their tools before sunrise.

For many days they repaired the dwellings of widows, strangers, and even those who had previously insulted them.

One disciple of the Pharisees observed this and asked,

"Master Builder, why do you labor first for those unable to repay you?"

Jesus answered,

"When the roof falls, the rain does not first ask who is righteous."

Then he added,

"So also should compassion."

The people marveled at these words.

Yet the Nazarene desired no followers.

He sought only faithful work.

Thus the years passed in hiddenness.

His body grew strong through carrying beams.

His mind grew clear through study.

His heart grew spacious through mercy.

And though few recognized it, the eternal Seth—the Heavenly Revealer, whose light shines like the sun upon all nations—was quietly preparing to begin his earthly ministry.

For the greatest revelations often begin in silence, and the brightest sunrise first appears as only the faintest light upon the eastern horizon.

Chapter Three

Beyond Damascus

When the Nazarene had grown into full strength and the craft of building rested securely within his hands, there awakened within him a longing that neither labor nor study could satisfy.

Joseph perceived it before a word had been spoken.

One evening, after the day's work was finished, father and son sat beneath the fig tree beside the workshop while the last light of the sun disappeared beyond the western hills.

For a long while neither spoke.b is

At length Joseph broke the silence.

"You have begun looking toward the eastern road."

Jesus answered,

"I have."

"You wish to travel."

"I do."

Joseph nodded slowly.

"The beam that never leaves the forest cannot become the roof of many houses."

Mary, hearing these things, wept quietly, not from fear, but because every mother knows that wisdom eventually calls every child beyond the safety of home.

She embraced him and said,

"Carry kindness farther than your footsteps."

Joseph placed into his hands the carpenter's square that had belonged to his own father.

Its edges had become smooth through many years of faithful labor.

He said,

"Measure your own heart before measuring the faults of another."

Jesus bowed his head and received the gift.

"I shall remember."

Thus the Nazarene departed with merchants journeying northward beyond Damascus, earning his place among them not through wealth but through honest labor, repairing

wagons, strengthening wheels, building shelters against sudden storms, and tending broken equipment whenever need arose. In this way his journey echoes the older tradition preserved by Moshe Reed, in which the Teacher leaves home to seek wisdom among eastern communities while remaining a craftsman and servant.

The caravan crossed hills clothed with cedars.

It descended into broad valleys where rivers nourished vineyards beyond counting.

At night the travelers gathered around small fires.

Some spoke of politics.

Others argued concerning religion.

Others counted profits.

Jesus listened more than he spoke.

One merchant asked him,

"Why remain silent while everyone debates?"

The Nazarene replied,

"When every cup is already full, pouring more into it only spills the water."

The merchant pondered this saying.

Several weeks into their journey they encountered a group of wandering philosophers.

One declared,

"Truth belongs only to our school."

Another insisted,

"No, it belongs to ours."

A third proclaimed,

"Every other path is darkness."

The Nazarene stooped, gathered dust into his hand, and opened his fingers.

The wind scattered every grain.

He asked,

"Tell me which grain reached the earth first."

No one could answer.

Then he said,

"So also pride scatters wisdom before it reaches the heart."

The philosophers departed in thoughtful silence.

As the caravan continued eastward, they entered lands unfamiliar to most people of Judea.

Temples rose whose names Israel had never spoken.

Priests chanted in tongues unknown to the disciples of Moses.

Images of radiant heavenly beings adorned the walls of sanctuaries.

Some among the caravan became fearful.

They whispered,

"We have entered the land of false gods."

Jesus answered gently,

"Fear learns nothing."

Then he entered respectfully into conversation with monks, sages, physicians, shepherds, and laborers alike.

For he believed that wherever compassion appeared, there also the Hidden Father had left traces of wisdom.

One evening an aged monk welcomed the travelers into a secluded monastery nestled among pines.

The elder looked long upon the Nazarene before asking,

"Why have you come?"

Jesus replied,

"I seek neither victory in argument nor mastery over others."

"What then?"

"I seek freedom from illusion."

The elder smiled.

"Remain until even your seeking becomes quiet."

Thus began many years hidden from the chronicles of kings but remembered by those who preserved the Secret Tradition.

Here the Nazarene learned disciplines unknown in Judea.

He practiced stillness before dawn.

He observed the movements of thought without pursuing them.

He discovered that silence often teaches more faithfully than speech.

He listened to teachings concerning compassion extending beyond tribe and nation.

He heard wise men speak of countless worlds filled with living beings, each journeying toward awakening according to its own condition.

He heard stories of radiant heavenly rulers who, through immense age and splendor, mistook themselves for the Highest Reality.

One evening he asked the eldest monk,

"If such rulers exist, who stands above them?"

The monk pointed not toward heaven, but into the empty sky between the stars.

"What you seek cannot be pointed toward."

The Nazarene remained silent.

At length he answered,

"Then every image is incomplete."

The elder bowed.

"And now you have begun to understand."

That night, as the eastern sun rose over distant mountains, Jesus watched its first rays illuminate the earth.

The elder approached him quietly.

"What do you see?"

"The light awakens all alike."

"The righteous and the wicked?"

"Both."

"The learned and the ignorant?"

"Both."

"The believer and the unbeliever?"

"Both."

The elder smiled.

"So also does the Hidden Father."

The Nazarene gazed upon the rising sun for a long time.

Something stirred within him that no words could yet contain.

Though he did not yet speak openly of the mystery, the eternal Seth—the Heavenly Revealer, the Solar Image of the Living Light—had begun to awaken within his earthly remembrance.

Yet he told no one.

For mysteries ripen like fruit.

They are sweetest only in their proper season.

Chapter Four

The Mystery of the Unknown Father

The monks among whom the Nazarene dwelt did not ask first what nation he belonged to.

Neither did they ask which language he spoke, nor from what family he descended.

Instead the eldest among them asked only,

"What do you worship?"

Jesus answered,

"I seek the One from whom all goodness flows."

The elder replied,

"Then be careful that you do not mistake the stream for its source."

These words remained within the Nazarene for many months.

Each dawn the community assembled before sunrise.

No images stood within their place of contemplation.

No statues.

No painted walls.

No golden throne.

Only silence.

The younger monks found this difficult.

One asked,

"Master, why have we no image of the Highest?"

The elder picked up an empty clay bowl.

"What shape has the space within it?"

The novice could not answer.

The elder continued,

"If I carve a face, you will worship the face."

"If I carve no face, perhaps you will seek what cannot be carved."

Jesus listened carefully.

That evening he walked alone beneath the stars.

He remembered the temples of Judea.

He remembered the sacrifices.

He remembered the endless disputes concerning the Law.

Then he remembered the profound silence of the eastern monastery.

He perceived that every nation possesses names for the Holy, yet no nation possesses the Holy itself.

For names belong to humanity.

The Infinite belongs to no one.

Several days later the monks gathered around a wandering teacher who spoke concerning the many heavens.

He described luminous realms inhabited by beings of astonishing brilliance.

Some had lived for ages beyond counting.

Others ruled entire worlds.

Still others governed heavenly kingdoms filled with immeasurable splendor.

When he had finished, several students exclaimed,

"Surely these are the highest gods."

The old teacher shook his head.

"A candle shines brightly in darkness."

"It remains small before the sun."

The Nazarene asked,

"Can even heavenly rulers remain ignorant?"

The teacher answered,

"A king who never leaves his kingdom easily mistakes his kingdom for all that exists."

"And if he rules wisely?"

"He is still not the Infinite."

"And if he creates worlds?"

"He creates only within the powers already given him."

"And what lies beyond him?"

The teacher smiled gently.

"When your question disappears, you shall begin to know."

Jesus fell silent.

Afterward he withdrew into solitude for forty days among the mountains.

He carried only water, bread, Joseph's carpenter's square, and a simple cloak.

There he meditated from sunrise until the appearance of the evening stars.

Thoughts arose.

He released them.

Images appeared.

He released them.

Names arose.

He released them.

Even the sacred Name of God.

He released it also.

At last there remained only silence.

Within that silence no voice spoke.

No angel appeared.

No vision unfolded.

Yet the Nazarene returned transformed.

The disciples who later heard this account asked him,

"What did you discover?"

Jesus answered,

"I discovered that every description leaves something undescribed."

Another asked,

"Did you behold the Father?"

The Nazarene replied,

"If I say yes, you will imagine an image."

"If I say no, you will imagine an absence."

"Better that I remain silent."

Many were troubled by this answer.

Some wished for certainty.

Others desired doctrines.

Still others longed for visions.

Jesus instead taught them this parable:

A child filled a clay cup from the sea.

Holding it triumphantly, he cried,

"I have captured the ocean."

An old fisherman smiled.

"You have carried away water."

"The sea remains."

"So it is," said the Nazarene, "with every doctrine concerning the Infinite."

For this reason he instructed his companions never to confuse the Creator known within history with the Nameless Source beyond all worlds.

"The Creator governs."

"The Source gives being even to the governors."

"The Creator speaks."

"The Source is beyond speech."

"The Creator shines."

"The Source gives light even to light."

Then one disciple asked,

"Master, is the God worshiped by our fathers false?"

Jesus answered with compassion,

"No ruler is false merely because he is not the Highest."

"A faithful governor may govern well."

"But the governor is not the King beyond every kingdom."

Thus the Nazarene began revealing the hidden mystery that many generations would misunderstand: that above every creator known within the worlds stands the Ineffable Father, beyond being and non-being, beyond all names, beyond every throne, and beyond every heaven.

Those who heard this teaching were amazed.

Some accepted it joyfully.

Some rejected it immediately.

Others carried the saying within themselves for many years before understanding began to dawn.

For the Hidden Father cannot be grasped by argument.

The Hidden Father is approached only through humility, compassion, contemplation, and the surrender of every image.

Thus the first veil was lifted from the eyes of the Nazarene, and he prepared to reveal the deeper mysteries concerning the rulers of the heavens and the origin of the worlds.

Chapter Five

The Brahma Kings Who Mistook Themselves for God

After the Nazarene had learned the way of silence, he remained among the eastern teachers for many seasons.

During this time he traveled between monasteries, villages, caravan cities, forests, and mountain settlements. He listened to many schools of wisdom without surrendering himself completely to any of them.

Some teachers spoke of the emptiness of all conditioned things.

Some taught the immeasurable compassion of awakened beings.

Some described heavens of subtle pleasure.

Others described radiant worlds inhabited by beings whose lifespans exceeded the rise and fall of civilizations.

The Nazarene listened carefully.

Among the teachers was an ancient monk called Samghapala, who had traveled through kingdoms beyond Persia and studied among contemplatives farther east.

One night the two sat beside a small fire beneath a sky filled with stars.

Samghapala said,

"There are beings who dwell in heavens so radiant that the human imagination mistakes descriptions of them for descriptions of the Absolute."

The Nazarene asked,

"Are they immortal?"

"No."

"Are they creators?"

"Some believe themselves to be."

Jesus looked toward the fire.

"How can a being create a world and yet remain ignorant?"

The monk lifted a burning branch.

"Did this flame create the light upon your face?"

"In a manner of speaking."

"Did it create light itself?"

"No."

"Then power within a condition does not mean power over the source of the condition."

The Nazarene understood.

The monk continued,

"Some beings arise within luminous realms before others. When later beings appear, the first may believe: I desired companions, and then companions appeared. Therefore I created them."

"But desire does not prove causation," said Jesus.

The monk smiled.

"You learn quickly."

Jesus answered,

"The mind places itself at the center of events and then mistakes sequence for sovereignty."

For many nights they continued these conversations.

The Nazarene learned of the Brahma kings: magnificent beings dwelling within subtle heavens, possessing lifespans incomprehensible to humanity.

Some were compassionate.

Some were wise.

Some governed their realms with justice.

But others became intoxicated with their own splendor.

Having forgotten conditions before their own awakening into those realms, they declared,

"I alone am the creator."

"I alone am eternal."

"There is none above me."

When Jesus heard these words, he became deeply troubled.

For he remembered words from the scriptures of his people.

A voice declaring itself the only God.

A jealous ruler demanding exclusive worship.

A creator shaping the world and commanding obedience.

The Nazarene did not immediately speak.

For many days he contemplated in solitude.

At last Samghapala found him beside a river.

Jesus asked,

"Can an entire people worship a heavenly ruler while believing him to be the Ultimate?"

The monk answered,

"Can a village know only one king and imagine no greater kingdom exists?"

"Yes."

"Then you have answered yourself."

The Nazarene looked into the flowing water.

"My people worship the God of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Moses."

"Then honor the good that has come through their covenant."

"But is their God the Ineffable?"

Samghapala remained silent.

Jesus understood that the answer must be discovered directly.

He therefore entered deeper contemplation.

For seven nights he slept little.

He ate only enough to sustain the body.

He released every image of God inherited from childhood.

The warrior.

The king.

The lawgiver.

The judge.

The father.

The creator.

One by one, he allowed these images to arise and dissolve.

At last he entered a stillness beyond thought.

And in that stillness he perceived—not through the eyes of flesh, but through awakened understanding—a hierarchy of immeasurable worlds.

He beheld earth surrounded by invisible regions.

He beheld rulers governing spheres of existence.

He beheld angels carrying out laws they had not established.

He beheld luminous kings receiving worship from beings below them.

Beyond these he perceived greater orders of intelligence.

Beyond these, still greater mysteries.

And beyond every hierarchy there was no throne.

No king.

No face.

No voice.

Only the immeasurable Mystery beyond being and non-being.

The Nameless Source.

The Hidden Father.

The Silence from which even gods arise.

Then the Nazarene understood.

The God of his ancestors was not nothing.

Nor was he merely an invention.

He was a ruler.

A mighty one.

A heavenly king within the conditioned worlds.

He had inspired justice.

He had established covenant.

He had opposed certain forms of cruelty.

He had guided a people through history.

Yet he was not the Ultimate Reality.

He was a Brahma God.

A ruler within becoming.

A creator within conditions he himself had not created.

And like certain Brahma kings spoken of by the eastern sages, he had mistaken the boundaries of his perception for the boundaries of reality.

When the Nazarene returned to the monastery, Samghapala saw that something had changed.

"What did you discover?" he asked.

Jesus answered,

"The god who says, 'There is none beside me,' speaks from within a room whose door he has not yet opened."

The monk remained silent.

Jesus continued,

"But I shall not teach hatred against him."

"Why?"

"Because ignorance is not healed by hatred."

"And what will you teach?"

"Discernment."

The monk smiled.

"Then perhaps you are ready to return home."

But the Nazarene was not yet ready.

For another mystery had begun troubling him.

If the creator was not the Highest, how had the worlds of suffering arisen?

Why did beings become trapped in ignorance?

Why did consciousness cling to identity?

Why did violence reproduce itself from generation to generation?

Why did rulers become tyrants?

Why did religions meant to guide the soul become prisons for the soul?

Why did the human being so often recognize goodness yet choose cruelty?

The Nazarene returned to Samghapala.

"Tell me of the powers that bind the worlds."

The monk answered,

"Different peoples give them different names."

"What do your teachers call them?"

"Ignorance. Craving. Hatred. Attachment. Becoming."

Jesus thought of the secret traditions he had encountered among wandering mystics from Syria and Egypt.

"They call them archons."

"Then perhaps," said the monk, "different travelers have seen the same prison from different windows."

The Nazarene remained awake throughout that night.

Before dawn he climbed the mountain above the monastery.

The sun appeared slowly upon the horizon.

Its light crossed borders without permission.

It entered temples dedicated to rival gods.

It illuminated the homes of the righteous and the cruel.

It shone upon Jews and foreigners.

Upon kings and slaves.

Upon believers and doubters.

Upon humans and animals.

And as the Nazarene watched the rising sun, a memory deeper than his earthly life stirred within him.

He saw a figure standing within the first dawn of humanity.

The Hidden Seth.

Not merely the son of Adam.

Not merely a patriarch within a genealogy.

But the Solar Revealer.

The Stranger from the incorruptible generation.

The image of awakened humanity sent into worlds ruled by ignorance.

The Nazarene trembled.

The figure of Seth turned toward him.

Then the distinction between the one who saw and the one who was seen disappeared.

There was only light.

When Jesus descended the mountain, the monks asked what he had witnessed.

He answered only,

"The sun has many rays, but the light is one."

They pressed him further.

"Who are you?"

The Nazarene replied,

"I am still remembering."

And from that day he began preparing for his return toward Galilee.

For the carpenter who had departed seeking wisdom would return as the Revealer.

The son of Joseph would return bearing the memory of Seth.

And the Nazarene would proclaim a teaching dangerous to every ruler of earth and heaven:

No throne is ultimate.

No god who demands fear is the Hidden Father.

No prison is eternal.

No archon rules the awakened mind.

And the Light buried within humanity is older than the world that seeks to contain it.

Chapter Six

The Secret Cosmology

Before beginning his return toward the lands of Israel, the Nazarene remained for one final season among the monasteries of the East.

For he had learned that the God of his ancestors was not the Nameless Source, but a mighty ruler within the worlds of becoming. He had learned also that heavenly power does not prove ultimate knowledge, and that even luminous beings may mistake the boundaries of their own perception for the boundaries of reality.

Yet one question remained.

How had the prison begun?

One evening Jesus sat with Samghapala beneath an ancient tree whose roots had broken through the stones surrounding the monastery.

The Nazarene asked,

"If the Hidden Father is beyond ignorance, from where does ignorance arise?"

The monk answered,

"From conditions."

"And from where come conditions?"

"From other conditions."

"And the first condition?"

The monk smiled.

"You seek the first link of a chain without beginning."

Jesus considered this.

"Then perhaps the question itself assumes what has not been proven."

"What does it assume?"

"That existence must have begun at one moment."

The monk nodded.

The Nazarene continued,

"Perhaps worlds arise from worlds, conditions from conditions, minds from previous causes, and consequences from forgotten actions. Perhaps no creature standing within the river can point toward the first drop."

Samghapala answered,

"Then do not waste your life searching for the first drop while beings drown beside you."

Jesus bowed his head.

This teaching remained with him.

Yet the Nazarene also possessed knowledge gathered from secret traditions nearer his homeland.

Among Syrian mystics he had heard of Sophia.

Among Egyptian initiates he had heard of the invisible Fullness.

Among wandering teachers he had heard of rulers called archons.

Among eastern contemplatives he had heard of endless world systems, heavens of subtle beings, cycles of arising and passing away, and Brahma kings who mistook themselves for creators.

The Nazarene did not accept these teachings blindly.

He entered silence.

He compared symbol with symbol.

He examined the fruit produced by each teaching.

Gradually he formed a language through which he could explain the hidden structure of existence to those prepared to hear.

He taught first of the Ineffable.

Before every distinction is the Nameless Mystery.

It cannot properly be called a being, for every being possesses characteristics by which it differs from another.

It cannot properly be called nothingness, for from it arises the possibility of everything.

It is not male.

It is not female.

It is not a king.

It is not a judge.

It does not sit upon a throne.

It possesses no location.

It cannot become angry, for anger belongs to changing states.

It cannot become jealous, for jealousy arises from fear of losing what one possesses.

It cannot be flattered by praise or injured by doubt.

The Nazarene called this Mystery the Hidden Father only because human speech requires symbols.

But he warned,

"When I say Father, release the image of a man."

"When I say Source, release the image of a fountain."

"When I say Light, release the image of fire."

"When I say One, release even the number."

A disciple of the eastern school asked,

"Why speak at all?"

Jesus replied,

"Because silence also becomes an idol when used to avoid compassion."

Thus he taught carefully.

From the Nameless Mystery he spoke of the first intelligible radiance, which certain secret traditions called Barbelo.

Barbelo was not a woman dwelling in the sky.

Nor was Barbelo another creator god.

Rather, Barbelo symbolized the first perfect reflection of the Unknowable: Thought without division, Awareness beholding itself without separation, the Womb of divine possibility.

Jesus said,

"If the Hidden Father is the unknowable depth, Barbelo is the first still water in which the depth is reflected."

From this primordial Fullness emerged countless orders of reality.

The Nazarene called them Aeons.

Some listeners imagined them as heavenly beings.

Others understood them as dimensions of consciousness.

Still others regarded them as eternal qualities within the divine Fullness.

Jesus refused to imprison the teaching within one interpretation.

He said,

"If two travelers describe a mountain from opposite valleys, do not assume that one mountain must be false."

Then he taught concerning Sophia.

Wisdom desired to comprehend the incomprehensible Source.

Yet the Infinite cannot become an object possessed by knowledge.

Thus Wisdom, reaching beyond the proper harmony of the Fullness, produced a distortion.

Not evil as an eternal substance.

Not darkness equal to light.

But confusion.

A reflection mistaken for the original.

A fragment imagining itself complete.

A ruler awakening within a limited heaven and declaring,

"I am the only God, and there is no other."

The Nazarene called this ruler Yaldabaoth.

But he warned his companions,

"Do not imagine too quickly that you understand this name."

A young monk asked,

"Is Yaldabaoth a being?"

Jesus answered,

"Perhaps."

"Is he the creator?"

"Within his domain."

"Is he the God worshiped by some nations?"

"At times."

"Is he also ignorance within the human mind?"

"Certainly."

The monk became frustrated.

"Master, which answer is correct?"

Jesus picked up a polished bowl filled with water.

He tilted it toward the moon.

The moon appeared within the bowl.

Then he disturbed the water.

The reflected moon shattered into fragments.

"Has the moon been broken?" he asked.

"No."

"Then learn the difference between reality and reflection."

The monk bowed.

Jesus continued,

"Yaldabaoth is wherever a fragment declares itself the Whole."

Thus the Nazarene united the traditions he had received.

The Brahma king who believes himself the eternal creator and the archon who proclaims himself the only God are mirrors of the same spiritual error.

The tyrant who declares his kingdom eternal repeats it.

The priest who believes his doctrine contains the Infinite repeats it.

The philosopher who believes his concept exhausts reality repeats it.

The ego that says, "I alone am the center," repeats it.

For Yaldabaoth is not overcome merely by changing religions.

He is overcome when the illusion of false ultimacy is seen through.

One evening a monk asked,

"Should we hate the Demiurge?"

The Nazarene answered immediately,

"No."

The monk was surprised.

"Why not?"

"Because hatred reproduces his ignorance within you."

"Then what should we do?"

"See clearly."

"And if he oppresses?"

"Resist without becoming his image."

"And if he commands worship?"

"Bow only where conscience remains free."

"And if he claims to be the Highest?"

"Continue seeking beyond his heaven."

The Nazarene then drew several circles in the dust.

Within the largest he drew smaller circles.

Within those he drew smaller ones still.

He said,

"Worlds within worlds."

"Realms within realms."

"Dreams within dreams."

"Heavens above heavens."

"Some rulers know that they serve."

"Others forget."

"Some guide wisely."

"Others demand worship."

"Some protect life."

"Others feed upon fear."

"But none of them is the Nameless Source."

A monk asked,

"How many worlds exist?"

Jesus looked upward toward the stars.

"Would you count every grain of sand before admitting the desert is vast?"

"No."

"Then do not imagine that existence has exhausted itself in the small region visible to your eyes."

He taught that countless world systems arise and pass away.

Some are brighter than this world.

Some darker.

Some inhabited by beings unlike humanity.

Some governed by compassionate rulers.

Others dominated by ignorance.

Some worlds may never encounter one another.

Others may influence one another through causes invisible to ordinary perception.

Yet everywhere the possibility of awakening remains.

For the Light is not the private possession of one species, one world, one nation, or one religion.

A student asked,

"Then was Israel not chosen?"

Jesus answered,

"Chosen for what?"

"To belong uniquely to God."

The Nazarene shook his head.

"A lamp may be chosen to illuminate a room."

"It is not chosen to condemn every other lamp."

The student became silent.

Jesus continued,

"Every people has received something."

"Every people has forgotten something."

"Every tradition preserves fragments."

"Every tradition casts shadows."

"The wise receive the fragment without worshiping the vessel."

These teachings disturbed some who heard them.

One accused him,

"You destroy certainty."

Jesus answered,

"No. I reveal its limits."

Another said,

"You make humanity insignificant among countless worlds."

The Nazarene replied,

"Humility is not insignificance."

"The flower does not become worthless because the field contains many flowers."

A third asked,

"If the cosmos is so vast, why should the Hidden Father care for us?"

Jesus looked toward ants carrying food beneath the tree.

"Does vastness prevent compassion?"

The man had no answer.

Near the end of the season, the Nazarene gathered the monks and travelers who had studied with him.

He said,

"I shall return west."

Samghapala asked,

"What will you teach your people?"

Jesus answered,

"That the Kingdom they seek is nearer than their breath."

"Will you teach them of Brahma kings?"

"To those prepared."

"Of Yaldabaoth?"

"To those prepared."

"Of the countless worlds?"

"To those prepared."

"And to the others?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"I shall tell them stories about seeds."

The monks laughed.

Samghapala embraced him.

"You have learned the art of teaching."

Jesus replied,

"I have learned that truth must sometimes enter through the smallest door."

At dawn the Nazarene departed.

He carried Joseph's carpenter's square.

A walking staff.

A repaired cloak.

Several small writings.

And memories that no scroll could contain.

As he descended from the mountains, the rising sun appeared before him.

The Nazarene stopped.

He remembered the vision of Seth.

Again the ancient recognition stirred within him.

But this time he did not resist it.

He whispered,

"The Revealer is not one body."

"The Light wears many faces."

"Seth walks wherever remembrance overcomes forgetfulness."

Then he continued westward.

Toward Damascus.

Toward Galilee.

Toward Jerusalem.

Toward Judas.

Toward the cross that would not hold him.

And toward the beginning of the teaching for which the rulers of earth and heaven would seek to silence him.

Chapter Seven

The Return of the Nazarene

After many years in the East, the Nazarene turned his face toward the lands of his childhood.

He traveled westward with merchants, monks, healers, and pilgrims. Some remained beside him for a few days. Others walked with him for months. He established no permanent school along the road and demanded no oath from those who listened.

When someone asked to become his disciple, he answered,

"Walk beside me until our roads divide."

A young seeker protested,

"But how shall I know whether I truly belong to you?"

Jesus replied,

"Do not belong to me."

The young man was confused.

The Nazarene continued,

"Belonging easily becomes possession. Listen carefully, practice sincerely, question courageously, and when the road requires it, continue without me."

The seeker asked,

"Then you desire no followers?"

"I desire awakened companions."

Thus the Nazarene returned westward.

He crossed regions where people worshiped many gods.

He passed temples dedicated to heavenly rulers, local guardians, ancestral spirits, divine kings, and celestial powers.

He condemned none merely for using unfamiliar names.

Instead he observed the fruit of worship.

Where religion produced generosity, he honored the generosity.

Where religion produced cruelty, he opposed the cruelty.

Where worship cultivated humility, he encouraged humility.

Where priests used fear to dominate the vulnerable, he confronted them.

A traveler asked,

"How shall we know whether a religion is true?"

Jesus answered,

"Look first at what kind of human being it produces."

The traveler asked,

"Is correct doctrine unimportant?"

The Nazarene replied,

"A map may be accurate while the traveler refuses to walk."

Then he added,

"Judge the map by whether it helps the lost find their way."

The Road Through Persia

In Persia the Nazarene encountered teachers who spoke of cosmic conflict between light and darkness.

Some taught that the universe was divided between two eternal powers.

One of them said,

"Light and darkness have fought from the beginning."

Jesus asked,

"Are they equal?"

The teacher answered,

"They oppose one another."

The Nazarene lit a lamp.

Darkness vanished from the immediate space around it.

Then he extinguished the flame.

Darkness returned.

Jesus said,

"Darkness does not attack the lamp."

"It appears where illumination is absent."

The teacher asked,

"Then you deny evil?"

"No."

"You deny the adversary?"

"No."

"What then do you deny?"

"That ignorance possesses the same depth as the Nameless Source."

The teacher considered this.

Jesus continued,

"Cruelty is real in its consequences."

"Hatred is real in its wounds."

"Tyranny is real to those beneath its hand."

"But do not grant darkness an eternal throne."

"Every prison depends upon walls."

"Every lie depends upon minds believing it."

"Every archon depends upon continued sleep."

The teacher asked,

"And if sleepers never awaken?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Then tend the lamp."

The Return to Damascus

After a long journey Jesus again approached Damascus.

The city appeared familiar, yet he perceived it differently.

When he had first passed beyond it, he had been a seeker.

Now he returned knowing that seeking itself must eventually become transparent.

He visited places where he had once questioned merchants and travelers.

Some who remembered the young carpenter scarcely recognized him.

An elderly innkeeper stared at him for a long while.

"Were you not the Galilean who traveled east many years ago?"

"I was."

"Did you find what you sought?"

Jesus smiled.

"I found that the seeker was part of what concealed it."

The innkeeper laughed.

"That sounds like something learned after walking too far."

"Sometimes the long road teaches that home was never as distant as imagined."

The innkeeper gave him bread and a place to sleep.

That night several people gathered around the Nazarene.

Word had spread concerning the traveler who had studied among eastern sages.

They expected stories of miracles.

Instead Jesus spoke of the mind.

He said,

"A man feared thieves, so he built a wall around his house."

"Then he feared enemies, so he made the wall higher."

"Then he feared betrayal, so he permitted no visitors."

"At last he died safely inside the prison he had built for protection."

The listeners became quiet.

Jesus said,

"Many minds are such houses."

One asked,

"How do we escape?"

"First notice the walls."

Another asked,

"And then?"

"Discover which ones are still necessary."

A third asked,

"And then?"

"Open a door."

The News from Galilee

While remaining near Damascus, the Nazarene received news from Galilee.

Joseph had grown old.

His strength had diminished.

The workshop continued, but the hands that had once carried heavy beams now trembled when lifting smaller tools.

Jesus departed immediately.

He traveled quickly, accepting little rest.

When at last he approached the village of his childhood, Mary saw him from a distance.

She did not recognize him immediately.

His face had been darkened by years beneath foreign suns. His clothing bore repairs in styles from several lands. His staff had been worn smooth by thousands of miles.

But when he came nearer, she knew him.

She embraced him without speaking.

The Nazarene wept.

For wisdom does not abolish love.

Detachment does not require coldness.

Awakening does not make the heart into stone.

He entered the workshop.

Joseph sat beside a half-finished table.

The old builder looked upon his son and smiled.

"You returned."

"I returned."

"Did you learn how to build a better house?"

Jesus knelt beside him.

"I learned how easily the mind builds prisons."

Joseph laughed weakly.

"Then perhaps carpentry was good preparation."

For several months the Nazarene remained at home.

He worked beside Joseph whenever the old man possessed sufficient strength.

When Joseph could no longer work, Jesus cared for him.

He prepared food.

He washed him.

He repaired the workshop.

He completed unfinished commissions.

He refused extra payment offered by those who had heard rumors of his wisdom.

One customer said,

"They say you studied with great masters."

Jesus answered,

"Today I am repairing your door."

The customer asked,

"Do great masters repair doors?"

"If they know how."

In the final days of Joseph's life, father and son sat together beneath the fig tree.

Joseph held the old carpenter's square.

"You kept it."

"I did."

"Did it help you measure truth?"

Jesus smiled.

"No."

Joseph laughed.

"Good. It was made for timber."

They sat together until sunset.

Then Joseph said,

"Wood bends."

"Walls crack."

"Roofs decay."

"Measure carefully anyway."

Jesus asked,

"Why?"

Joseph answered,

"Because faithfulness belongs to the builder, not permanence."

The Nazarene never forgot these words.

When Joseph died, the village gathered.

There was no miracle.

The dead man did not rise.

Jesus did not command death to surrender its body.

He mourned.

He buried his father.

He comforted Mary.

And when a neighbor said,

"Surely a holy man such as you could have asked God to preserve him,"

the Nazarene answered,

"Love does not become greater by refusing impermanence."

The neighbor asked,

"Will he rise again in this body?"

Jesus remained silent.

Then he said,

"Why do you wish to imprison the traveler again within the house he has already left?"

The neighbor was troubled.

Jesus continued,

"Do not cling to the image of resurrection as the repair of old flesh."

"That which is born from conditions changes with conditions."

"That which awakens beyond clinging is not saved by returning to the prison."

This was among the first occasions in Galilee when the Nazarene openly challenged the teaching of the resurrection of the dead.

Some who heard him were offended.

Others were curious.

A Pharisee visiting the village confronted him.

"Do you deny that God shall raise the righteous from their graves?"

The Nazarene answered,

"I deny that liberation consists in rebuilding the cage."

The Pharisee said,

"Then you oppose the hope of Israel."

Jesus replied,

"Hope becomes wrong view when attachment disguises itself as faith."

The Pharisee departed angrily.

Word began to spread.

The carpenter who had journeyed east had returned.

He spoke strangely concerning God.

He questioned resurrection.

He spoke of awakening.

He refused to condemn foreigners.

He honored the prophets but claimed that the God known through history was not the Nameless Source beyond all heavens.

Some called him wise.

Some called him dangerous.

Some called him mad.

The Nazarene answered none of these accusations.

Instead he reopened Joseph's workshop.

He repaired furniture.

He helped rebuild a widow's damaged roof.

He taught children how to plant fig trees.

He sat in silence before sunrise.

And when people came asking for the mysteries of heaven, he often placed tools into their hands.

One morning several seekers arrived before dawn.

"Teacher," they said, "show us the path to the Kingdom."

Jesus pointed toward a collapsed wall beside the house of an elderly woman.

"Begin there."

They were disappointed.

"We came for spiritual teaching."

The Nazarene lifted a stone.

"So did I."

By midday the wall stood again.

Only then did Jesus gather them beneath the fig tree.

He said,

"You seek a kingdom descending from the clouds."

"You wait for dead bodies to leave their graves."

"You expect God to destroy your enemies."

"You search the heavens for what you refuse to awaken within yourselves."

One seeker asked,

"Where, then, is the Kingdom?"

The Nazarene looked upon them.

"It is within you."

He pointed toward the village.

"And it is around you."

Another asked,

"When will it come?"

Jesus answered,

"It does not come by watching the sky."

"The Kingdom is spread upon the earth, but humanity does not see it."

A silence fell upon them.

For the Nazarene had begun to speak the sayings that would later be preserved among the hidden communities.

The time of preparation had ended.

The carpenter had returned.

The Revealer was beginning to speak.

Chapter Eight

The Kingdom Within

After these things, the Nazarene began walking through the villages surrounding Galilee.

He did not announce himself as the only Christ.

He did not declare that humanity must worship his person.

He did not say that the Hidden Father had sent only one son into the worlds.

Instead he proclaimed,

"The Kingdom is within you and outside you."

"When you know yourselves, you shall understand that you are children of the Living One."

"But when you do not know yourselves, you dwell in poverty, and you yourselves become the poverty."

Those who heard him were astonished.

For many teachers spoke of a kingdom that would arrive in the future.

Some expected armies.

Some expected angels.

Some expected the restoration of Israel.

Some expected the dead to rise bodily from their graves.

Some expected the nations to kneel before Jerusalem.

But the Nazarene taught another kingdom.

A Pharisee asked him,

"When shall the Kingdom of God come?"

Jesus answered,

"You watch the horizon while ignoring the light behind your own eyes."

The Pharisee said,

"Does this mean there shall be no sign?"

The Nazarene replied,

"The one who needs thunder before noticing the rain has not learned attention."

Another asked,

"Will the Kingdom appear in Jerusalem?"

Jesus answered,

"If those in Jerusalem awaken."

"In Galilee?"

"If those in Galilee awaken."

"Among the nations?"

"If the nations awaken."

The man became frustrated.

"Where, then, is its throne?"

Jesus touched the man's chest.

"First remove the tyrant seated here."

The crowd laughed.

But the Nazarene did not.

For he knew the tyranny of the ego to be more dangerous than many kings.

The Christ Is a State of Awakening

In those days a dispute arose among the disciples concerning the identity of the Christ.

Some believed the Christ would be a warrior descended from David.

Others expected a heavenly being descending from the clouds.

Others believed the Christ would restore the priesthood.

One evening they gathered around the Nazarene beside the sea.

A disciple asked,

"Teacher, are you the Christ?"

Jesus looked at him for a long time.

Then he asked,

"What do you mean by Christ?"

"The Anointed One."

"And what is anointing?"

"The choosing of God."

Jesus picked up a lamp.

He lit it and placed several unlit lamps around it.

From the first flame he lit a second.

From the second he lit a third.

Soon every lamp burned.

Then he asked,

"Which flame is the true flame?"

The disciples answered,

"They are all fire."

The Nazarene said,

"Then understand."

One disciple protested,

"But surely one must be first."

Jesus replied,

"First in sequence does not mean alone in nature."

Another asked,

"Then what is the Christ?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The Christ is awakened consciousness."

"It is the human being remembering the Light from which consciousness arises."

"It is the end of slavery to the false self."

"It is the mind no longer ruled by fear, craving, hatred, and ignorance."

"It is compassion without boundary."

"It is wisdom without possession."

"It is freedom without domination."

The disciples were silent.

Then Jesus said,

"Do not say, 'The Christ is here,' as though pointing toward one body."

"Do not say, 'The Christ is there,' as though awakening belonged to another age."

"The seed of anointing is within every conscious being."

A disciple asked,

"Can everyone become Christ?"

Jesus answered,

"Can every lamp receive flame?"

"Yes."

"Then why do you ask?"

Another disciple said,

"But some lamps are broken."

"Repair them."

"Some contain no oil."

"Fill them."

"Some are buried beneath dust."

"Clean them."

"And some refuse the flame."

Jesus answered,

"Then keep the fire available without hatred."

Thus the Nazarene taught that the Christ was not a divine title possessed exclusively by one person.

He called himself Christ only in the same manner that one awakened person might call another toward awakening.

He said,

"What I am, you may become."

"What I have remembered, you may remember."

"Where I have entered, the door remains open."

But many found this teaching more difficult than worship.

For worship permits distance.

Awakening demands transformation.

A man said,

"Master, I would rather kneel before you."

Jesus answered,

"Stand."

The man knelt more deeply.

Jesus took him by the arms and raised him.

"I did not come to make better servants of sleeping people."

"Awaken."

Know Yourself

The Nazarene often taught concerning self-knowledge.

Yet by knowing oneself he did not mean endlessly thinking about one's personality.

He did not mean worshiping preferences.

He did not mean strengthening every identity.

He taught that most people knew only the masks placed upon them by the world.

Jew.

Greek.

Roman.

Slave.

Master.

Male.

Female.

Rich.

Poor.

Righteous.

Sinner.

Foreign.

Native.

Jesus said,

"These are garments."

"Useful in their season."

"Sometimes beautiful."

"Sometimes burdensome."

"But the one wearing the garment is deeper than the garment."

A merchant asked,

"Who am I beneath my name?"

Jesus replied,

"Discover it."

"How?"

"Watch everything you call yourself."

"And then?"

"Ask whether it remains."

The merchant said,

"I am wealthy."

"Could you lose your wealth?"

"Yes."

"Then wealth cannot be your deepest nature."

"I am respected."

"Could people despise you tomorrow?"

"Yes."

"Then reputation cannot be your deepest nature."

"I am my body."

"Has your body changed since childhood?"

"Yes."

"Then continue looking."

The merchant became silent.

Jesus said,

"When you find something you can possess as an idea, continue."

"Why?"

"Because the Living One is not another object among objects."

The Two Become One

Among the sayings of the Nazarene was one that confused many.

He said,

"When you make the two one, and when you make the inner as the outer and the outer as the inner, then you shall enter the Kingdom."

A disciple asked,

"Must men become women and women become men?"

Jesus answered,

"The body hears bodily things."

"The mind must listen more deeply."

"What, then, are the two?"

Jesus drew a line in the earth.

"Self and other."

He drew another.

"Sacred and ordinary."

Another.

"Jew and foreigner."

Another.

"Pure and impure."

Another.

"Spirit and matter."

Then he erased the lines with his foot.

"The world of division is useful for walking."

"It becomes dangerous when mistaken for the deepest truth."

A disciple asked,

"Then are there no differences?"

Jesus pointed toward two trees.

"Are these identical?"

"No."

"Do they require separation in order to exist?"

The disciple thought for a moment.

"No. They share the same earth."

Jesus smiled.

"Unity is not sameness."

"Difference is not separation."

The Child and the Kingdom

One afternoon children gathered around the Nazarene while several scholars debated the proper interpretation of the Law.

The scholars became irritated by the noise.

One said,

"Remove the children so that serious matters may be discussed."

Jesus called a small girl toward him.

She had been playing with stones beside the road.

He asked,

"What are you building?"

"A city."

"Who lives there?"

"Everyone."

"Even foreigners?"

She looked confused.

"Why not?"

The Nazarene turned toward the scholars.

"She has entered before you."

One scholar became offended.

"Because she is ignorant."

Jesus answered,

"Yes."

The scholar smiled triumphantly.

Then Jesus continued,

"She is ignorant of several hatreds you have carefully studied."

The crowd laughed.

The scholar did not.

Jesus placed one of the child's stones into his hand.

"You have learned many distinctions."

"Now learn which ones are useful and which ones merely preserve hostility."

The Living and the Dead

The Nazarene also spoke strangely concerning life and death.

He said,

"The dead are not those lying beneath the earth."

"The dead are those who have never awakened while breathing."

A Sadducee asked,

"Then you agree that there is no resurrection?"

Jesus answered,

"I agree that your opponent's error does not make your understanding complete."

The man frowned.

Jesus continued,

"One waits for corpses to rise."

"The other believes consciousness is nothing more than flesh."

"Both stare at the tomb."

"Neither knows the Living One."

A Pharisee nearby asked,

"Then what is resurrection?"

Jesus answered,

"Awaken before death."

The Pharisee demanded,

"Will the body rise?"

The Nazarene replied,

"The seed does not become a tree by returning as a seed."

"But the scriptures promise resurrection."

"Then understand resurrection."

The Pharisee grew angry.

"You twist the words of the prophets."

Jesus answered,

"And you imprison mystery within expectation."

The crowd divided.

Some sided with the Pharisee.

Others with the Nazarene.

But Jesus silenced those who praised him.

"Do not create another faction around my name."

One follower said,

"But Master, they oppose you."

Jesus answered,

"If you become hateful in my defense, you have opposed my teaching more completely than they."

The Kingdom Spread Upon the Earth

Near sunset the Nazarene led the disciples onto a hill overlooking farms, villages, roads, vineyards, and the distant sea.

He asked,

"What do you see?"

One said,

"Roman territory."

Another said,

"The land promised to Israel."

Another said,

"Fields belonging to wealthy families."

Another said,

"Villages suffering under taxes."

A child who had followed them said,

"I see birds."

Jesus smiled.

"Each sees through the world carried within."

Then he said,

"The Kingdom of the Father is spread upon the earth, and people do not see it."

A disciple asked,

"What prevents them?"

Jesus answered,

"They have been taught to see only what can be possessed."

"Land."

"Status."

"Tribe."

"Victory."

"Purity."

"Power."

"They look upon a tree and calculate timber."

"They look upon a river and calculate ownership."

"They look upon another person and calculate usefulness."

"They look upon themselves and calculate superiority or shame."

"Thus the Kingdom remains hidden in plain sight."

Another asked,

"How shall we see it?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Become empty of what prevents seeing."

As darkness descended, the disciples expected further explanation.

None came.

Jesus sat beneath an olive tree.

The others gradually became silent.

The stars appeared.

The wind moved through the grass.

Some understood.

Some did not.

But all remembered the evening.

For the Nazarene had begun revealing the first mystery of his public teaching:

The Kingdom was not a future empire.

The Christ was not the possession of one man.

Resurrection was not the restoration of decaying flesh.

And salvation was not submission to a ruler in the heavens.

The door of liberation stood within consciousness itself.

But to pass through it, the sleeper had to awaken.

Chapter Nine

The Hidden Sayings

As the Nazarene traveled through Galilee, crowds began to gather around him.

Some came seeking healing.

Some came seeking wisdom.

Some came because they had heard rumors that the carpenter who had traveled into the East now taught mysteries concerning consciousness, the hidden worlds, and the God beyond God.

Others came merely to accuse him.

The Nazarene welcomed them all.

Yet he did not teach every person in the same manner.

To the hungry, he gave bread before doctrine.

To the grieving, he offered companionship before explanation.

To the proud, he gave questions.

To the frightened, he gave courage.

To those obsessed with mysteries, he sometimes gave ordinary work.

To those trapped within ordinary concerns, he sometimes spoke mysteries.

For he said,

"The physician does not give one medicine to every illness."

Among those who gathered around him were men and women who began preserving his sayings.

Some wrote upon scraps of parchment.

Others memorized them.

Still others repeated them in marketplaces, workshops, homes, and along caravan roads.

The Nazarene warned them,

"Do not preserve my words while forgetting what they point toward."

A scribe asked,

"Then why record them?"

Jesus answered,

"A sign beside the road may help a traveler."

"But no one reaches the city by embracing the sign."

Seek Until You Find

One morning a young man approached the Nazarene.

He said,

"Teacher, I have studied the Law since childhood."

Jesus nodded.

"I have studied the prophets."

"Good."

"I have listened to Greek philosophers."

"Good."

"I have traveled among priests."

"Good."

The young man became frustrated.

"Yet I remain uncertain."

Jesus smiled.

"Good."

The young man stared at him.

"How can uncertainty be good?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Because the closed cup cannot receive water."

Then he said,

"Whoever seeks should continue seeking until finding."

"And when finding, the seeker will be disturbed."

"And after being disturbed, the seeker will marvel."

"And after marveling, the seeker will become free of the rulers."

The young man asked,

"Why should finding disturb me?"

Jesus replied,

"Because truth first destroys the house built by false certainty."

"And why marvel afterward?"

"Because when the walls fall, the sky appears."

The Lion and the Human

Another day Jesus spoke a strange saying.

"Blessed is the human who consumes the lion, so that the lion becomes human."

"But miserable is the human whom the lion consumes, for the human becomes beast."

The disciples were confused.

Peter asked,

"Do you speak of animals?"

Jesus answered,

"I speak of what lives within you."

He continued,

"Every human being contains forces older than reason."

"Fear."

"Rage."

"Hunger."

"Desire."

"The will to dominate."

"The delight in revenge."

"These are not destroyed by pretending they do not exist."

A disciple asked,

"What then should be done?"

"Know them."

"Master them."

"Transform their strength."

"The lion becomes human when power serves wisdom."

"The human becomes lion when consciousness becomes servant to appetite."

Another disciple asked,

"Should we hate the beast within?"

Jesus replied,

"What you hate in darkness grows unseen."

"Bring it into knowledge."

"Strength disciplined becomes courage."

"Desire understood becomes compassion."

"Anger purified becomes resistance to injustice."

"Fear understood becomes vigilance."

"But when these rule without awareness, the human being becomes their animal."

The Splinter and the Beam

The Nazarene observed that people easily recognized faults in others.

A man once approached him complaining endlessly about his brother.

"My brother is greedy."

"My brother is arrogant."

"My brother speaks too much."

"My brother refuses correction."

Jesus listened patiently.

Then he asked,

"Does your brother speak of you?"

"Certainly."

"What does he say?"

The man hesitated.

"That I judge everyone."

The crowd laughed.

Jesus did not.

Instead he handed the man Joseph's old carpenter's square.

"Take this."

The man examined it.

"What should I measure?"

"Yourself."

The man smiled despite his embarrassment.

Jesus said,

"Remove the beam from your own eye before searching for splinters in another."

Then he added,

"But after removing the beam, do not become proud that your eyesight has improved."

The Light Within

At another gathering the Nazarene entered a darkened house.

He lit a lamp and placed a clay vessel over it.

The room remained dark.

He asked,

"Has the light disappeared?"

The disciples answered,

"No."

"Then why do we not see?"

"Because it is covered."

Jesus removed the vessel.

Light filled the room.

Then he said,

"There is light within the person of light."

"When it shines, it illuminates the whole world."

"When it remains concealed, darkness appears."

A disciple asked,

"Is this light the soul?"

Jesus answered,

"The word soul has become a basket carrying too many meanings."

"Then is it spirit?"

"Another basket."

"What should we call it?"

Jesus smiled.

"Why must you name the flame before warming yourself?"

The disciple became silent.

The Nazarene continued,

"The Light is not your personality."

"It is not your memories."

"It is not your opinions."

"It is not your nationality."

"It is not your reputation."

"It is not even the image you call yourself."

"These things arise and pass."

"The Light is recognized when the false owner becomes quiet."

The Solitary Ones

Jesus often praised those whom he called the solitary.

Some misunderstood him and fled into caves.

When he learned of this, he laughed.

A disciple asked,

"Did you not teach that blessed are the solitary?"

"I did."

"Then why laugh at those who seek isolation?"

"Because loneliness and solitude are not the same."

He explained,

"One may live among crowds while inwardly free."

"Another may live alone in a cave while arguing with imagined enemies all day."

"The solitary one is the person no longer divided against himself."

A woman asked,

"Can a mother surrounded by children become solitary?"

"Yes."

"Can a merchant?"

"Yes."

"A soldier?"

"If conscience awakens."

"A priest?"

Jesus paused.

The crowd laughed.

Then he smiled.

"Even a priest."

The World as a Corpse

One day the Nazarene said,

"Whoever has known the world has discovered a corpse."

"And whoever has discovered a corpse, the world is not worthy of that one."

Many were disturbed.

A farmer said,

"Do you despise creation?"

Jesus shook his head.

"I despise nothing that lives."

"Then why call the world a corpse?"

The Nazarene pointed toward a wealthy man passing nearby, surrounded by servants.

"Observe."

The man wore expensive clothing.

He displayed rings upon his fingers.

His servants carried goods behind him.

Jesus asked,

"What does he seek?"

"More wealth."

"And when he obtains it?"

"More."

"And when death comes?"

"He leaves it."

Jesus said,

"The world becomes corpse-like when the changing is worshiped as permanent."

"The flower is beautiful because it blooms."

"Attachment demands that it never fade."

"The body is precious because it lives."

"Attachment demands that it never change."

"Relationships are holy because love becomes possible."

"Possession says, 'You belong to me forever.'"

"The corpse is not creation."

"The corpse is the illusion that impermanent things can become permanent through grasping."

Become Passersby

The Nazarene and his companions once rested beside a road traveled by merchants.

Caravans passed continuously.

One disciple admired a wealthy procession carrying spices, gold, ivory, and fine cloth.

Another envied the soldiers escorting it.

A third wished to travel with them.

Jesus watched the caravan disappear into the distance.

Then he said,

"Become passersby."

Peter asked,

"Should we own nothing?"

Jesus answered,

"Possess what serves life."

"Do not allow possession to possess you."

"Build houses."

"But remember that walls cannot prevent impermanence."

"Love your families."

"But do not transform love into control."

"Preserve traditions."

"But do not imprison the Infinite within ancestry."

"Use names."

"But remember that no name is the thing named."

"Become passersby."

The Empty Jar

A woman named Salome asked the Nazarene,

"How long shall death rule?"

Jesus answered,

"As long as you continue giving birth to what dies."

She was troubled.

"Should humanity cease having children?"

Jesus replied,

"You hear only the surface."

He picked up an empty jar.

"What is this?"

"A jar."

He shattered it upon a stone.

The disciples were startled.

Jesus asked,

"Where is the jar?"

"Broken."

"Where did the space within it go?"

No one answered.

The Nazarene said,

"You mourn forms because you mistake the vessel for the space."

Salome asked,

"Then what survives death?"

Jesus answered,

"First discover what is truly alive before asking what survives."

The Beginning and the End

A scholar asked,

"Teacher, tell us about the end of the world."

Jesus answered,

"Have you discovered the beginning?"

"No."

"Then why do you hurry toward the end?"

The scholar said,

"The prophets speak of the last days."

Jesus replied,

"Every empire believes history ends with itself."

The scholar objected,

"Surely creation had a beginning."

Jesus drew a circle in the dust.

"Show me where the circle begins."

The scholar pointed toward one place.

Jesus asked,

"Why there?"

The man chose another.

"Why there?"

The scholar understood.

Jesus said,

"Those who understand the beginning understand the end."

"Arising and passing belong to the same movement."

"The seed disappears into the tree."

"The tree disappears into soil."

"The soil enters another seed."

"Do not search for liberation by imagining one final rearrangement of the prison."

The Image and the Light

The Nazarene taught that images are visible, but the Light within them remains hidden.

He said,

"Images are revealed to humanity."

"But the Light within them is concealed by the image."

A painter asked,

"Should we therefore destroy images?"

Jesus answered,

"No."

"Why not?"

"Because destruction can become another form of obsession."

"Then what should we do?"

"See through them."

The painter asked,

"Can an image reveal truth?"

"Yes."

"Can it conceal truth?"

"Yes."

"How shall we know the difference?"

Jesus replied,

"When the window makes you forget the sky, clean the window."

The Saying About Becoming Christ

Near the end of these teachings, one disciple approached the Nazarene privately.

"Master, people are beginning to call you the Christ."

Jesus remained silent.

The disciple continued,

"Should we stop them?"

Jesus answered,

"Ask them what they mean."

"They mean that you alone are the Anointed One."

"Then correct them."

The disciple was astonished.

"How?"

The Nazarene said,

"Tell them the Christ is the awakened human."

"Tell them the anointing is consciousness freed from ignorance."

"Tell them the Kingdom does not belong to one body."

"Tell them the Light has never limited itself to one lamp."

The disciple asked,

"Then are you not the Christ?"

Jesus answered,

"I am Christ when I abide in awakened consciousness."

"You are Christ when you abide in awakened consciousness."

"The stranger may become Christ."

"The enemy may become Christ."

"The prisoner may become Christ."

"The king may become Christ, though kings find it difficult."

The disciple smiled.

Jesus continued,

"Do not turn my awakening into an excuse for your sleep."

"Do not say, 'He is the Light, therefore I may remain darkness.'"

"Do not say, 'He is the Son, therefore I am merely dust.'"

"Do not place me upon a throne so high that you excuse yourself from walking the path."

The disciple asked,

"What, then, should we say about you?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Say that I remembered."

"And what should we say about ourselves?"

"That you are learning to remember."

The disciple bowed.

Jesus raised him.

"I have already told you."

"Stand."

That evening the sayings were repeated among the companions.

Some understood them.

Some altered them.

Some softened them.

Some made the Nazarene more distant from humanity because they found worship easier than transformation.

But the hidden communities preserved another memory:

The Nazarene did not come to remain the only awakened one.

He came to awaken others.

He did not come to establish the worship of his personality.

He came to reveal the path beyond personality.

He did not say,

"Remain beneath me."

He said,

"Become what I have become."

And those who understood this saying began to call his teaching not the religion of the Nazarene, but the Way of Awakening.

Chapter Ten

The Mystery of the Bridal Chamber

After the Nazarene had taught concerning the Kingdom within and the awakening of the Christ-consciousness, many began to misunderstand his words.

Some believed awakening meant escaping the body.

Others believed the material world was entirely evil.

Some despised marriage.

Others despised celibacy.

Some withdrew from society and congratulated themselves upon their purity.

Others indulged every desire, claiming that the awakened person stood beyond all restraint.

When these reports reached the Nazarene, he gathered his companions in a house near the sea.

There he said,

"Every truth becomes false when grasped without balance."

A disciple asked,

"Master, is the body a prison?"

Jesus answered,

"It may become one."

"Then the body is evil?"

"No."

"Is the world evil?"

"No."

"Then why do you speak of liberation?"

The Nazarene picked up a fishing net.

He placed it upon the ground.

"Is this net evil?"

"No."

He wrapped it around the disciple's feet.

"Can it now hinder you?"

"Yes."

Jesus removed it.

"The problem is not form."

"The problem is bondage."

The Visible and the Invisible

The Nazarene taught that every visible thing possesses an invisible depth.

A house is more than stones.

A marriage is more than bodies.

Bread is more than grain.

Water is more than liquid.

A human being is more than flesh.

A word is more than sound.

Yet he warned,

"Do not imagine that saying 'more than' means despising what is visible."

A disciple asked,

"Then how are the visible and invisible related?"

Jesus held up a lamp.

"Can you separate the flame from its light?"

"No."

"Can you grasp the light without encountering something through which it shines?"

The disciple answered,

"Not easily."

Jesus said,

"So the hidden becomes known through appearance, yet appearance does not exhaust the hidden."

Another disciple asked,

"Is this why people fail to recognize the Light?"

The Nazarene replied,

"They either worship the lamp or smash it."

"Few remember to see by it."

The Bridal Chamber

Among the most secret teachings of the Nazarene was the mystery he called the Bridal Chamber.

Many later misunderstood this teaching.

Some believed it referred only to marriage between man and woman.

Others transformed it into a secret ritual.

Still others imagined physical acts that Jesus had never taught.

But the Nazarene explained the mystery differently.

He said,

"The Bridal Chamber is the reconciliation of what ignorance has divided."

A disciple asked,

"What has ignorance divided?"

Jesus answered,

"The inner from the outer."

"The human from the Divine Image."

"Wisdom from compassion."

"Knowledge from love."

"Contemplation from action."

"Self from other."

"Life from death."

"Earth from heaven."

The disciple asked,

"How can these become one?"

The Nazarene replied,

"Not by destroying difference."

"By seeing through separation."

He pointed toward the sea.

"Does every wave possess a different shape?"

"Yes."

"Is every wave separate from the sea?"

"No."

"Then learn the Bridal Chamber."

The Marriage of Wisdom and Compassion

The Nazarene observed that some seekers became proud of knowledge.

They memorized cosmologies.

They learned the names of Aeons.

They debated the ranks of angels.

They spoke of Barbelo, Sophia, Yaldabaoth, archons, heavens, worlds, emanations, and mysteries.

Yet some refused bread to the hungry.

Jesus rebuked them.

He said,

"Gnosis without compassion is another archon."

One scholar protested,

"But knowledge liberates."

Jesus answered,

"Then why has yours made you cruel?"

The scholar fell silent.

Jesus continued,

"The Bridal Chamber joins wisdom and compassion."

"Insight without love becomes cold."

"Love without insight becomes easily manipulated."

"Wisdom sees clearly."

"Compassion refuses to abandon."

"When the two embrace, the Christ is born within consciousness."

A woman named Mariam asked,

"Is this birth the true virgin birth?"

Jesus smiled.

"Now you are listening."

The disciples leaned closer.

The Nazarene continued,

"The Christ is born from the consciousness that has become empty of possession."

"Virgin does not mean untouched flesh."

"It means the mind no longer impregnated by the archons."

"The mind emptied of hatred."

"The mind emptied of false identity."

"The mind emptied of the demand to dominate."

"Within such emptiness, the Living Light becomes visible."

Mariam said,

"Then every person may give birth to Christ."

Jesus answered,

"That is the mystery."

The Chrism

Another day the Nazarene spoke concerning anointing.

A disciple asked,

"Who has authority to anoint the Christ?"

Jesus answered,

"Can one lamp authorize another lamp to burn?"

The disciple replied,

"No."

"Then understand the chrism."

He explained that outward anointing with oil may serve as a symbol.

But no oil creates awakening.

No priest can manufacture the Christ.

No institution owns the Spirit.

No ruler grants access to the Hidden Father.

The Nazarene said,

"The true chrism is awareness."

"It is the fragrance of consciousness freed from delusion."

"Those who possess it do not need to announce themselves."

A disciple asked,

"How shall we recognize them?"

Jesus replied,

"By what grows around them."

"Do frightened people become more afraid?"

"Do wounded people become more wounded?"

"Do the poor become poorer?"

"Do followers become dependent?"

"Do enemies become less than human?"

"If so, the fragrance is not the chrism."

"Then what grows around the truly anointed?"

Jesus answered,

"Courage without cruelty."

"Humility without weakness."

"Compassion without possession."

"Knowledge without arrogance."

"Freedom without abandonment."

The Mirror

The Nazarene once entered the house of a wealthy woman who possessed a polished bronze mirror.

Such mirrors were costly, and several disciples admired it.

Jesus looked into the reflection.

Then he asked,

"Is this me?"

The disciples laughed.

"It is your image."

"Does the image exist without me?"

"No."

"Am I contained inside the bronze?"

"No."

Jesus turned the mirror toward Peter.

Now Peter appeared.

Then toward Mariam.

Then toward Judas.

Each face appeared and vanished.

Jesus said,

"The awakened mind is like this mirror."

"It receives every appearance."

"It possesses none."

"It does not cling to the beautiful."

"It does not resist the ugly."

"It reflects without imprisonment."

Judas asked,

"Is the Hidden Father also a mirror?"

The Nazarene answered,

"No image reaches that far."

Judas smiled.

"You always destroy the answer."

Jesus replied,

"Only when the answer becomes a wall."

The Companion

Among the disciples, Mariam often understood the Nazarene's symbolic teachings before others.

This caused jealousy.

Some asked,

"Why do you speak privately with her?"

Jesus answered,

"Because she asks questions privately."

Another complained,

"Do you love her more than us?"

The Nazarene replied,

"Your jealousy asks me to divide love so that you may measure it."

The disciple became ashamed.

Jesus continued,

"A companion is not one who possesses another."

"A true companion helps the other become free."

Mariam asked,

"Then is companionship also a Bridal Chamber?"

"Yes."

"Can friendship become sacramental?"

"Yes."

"Can shared labor?"

"Yes."

"Can silence between two people?"

"Yes."

"Can disagreement?"

Jesus paused.

"If both love truth more than victory."

The disciples laughed.

Names Are Given to the Living

The Nazarene taught another difficult saying.

He said,

"Names given in the world are deceptive."

A scribe objected,

"Without names, how could we speak?"

Jesus answered,

"I did not say names are useless."

"I said they are deceptive when mistaken for essence."

The scribe asked,

"Explain."

Jesus pointed toward Judas.

"What is his name?"

"Judas."

"Was he Judas before anyone called him Judas?"

The scribe hesitated.

"He existed."

"Then the name came after the life."

"Yes."

Jesus said,

"Yet people kill one another over names."

"Jew."

"Greek."

"Roman."

"Barbarian."

"Righteous."

"Sinner."

"Orthodox."

"Heretic."

"They forget the living person and fight the label."

The scribe asked,

"Should all distinctions disappear?"

"No."

"Then what do you teach?"

"Use names as tools."

"Do not use them as prisons."

The Sacrament of Recognition

One evening the disciples gathered for a shared meal.

Bread was placed upon the table.

Wine was poured.

Olives, figs, lentils, and herbs were shared among them.

A disciple asked,

"Master, what makes a meal sacred?"

Jesus answered,

"Hunger."

They laughed.

He continued,

"And gratitude."

"And sharing."

"And recognition."

"What recognition?"

The Nazarene looked around the table.

"That no one here exists alone."

"The farmer planted."

"The rain fell."

"The soil received."

"The laborer harvested."

"The miller ground."

"The baker worked."

"Hands carried the bread."

"Now you eat."

"Where, then, is the separate person?"

No one answered.

Jesus broke the bread.

"This is the Bridal Chamber."

A disciple was confused.

"This meal?"

Jesus replied,

"Whenever separation becomes communion without destroying difference, the mystery appears."

The Chamber Within

Later that night Mariam asked the Nazarene,

"Where is the Bridal Chamber?"

Jesus answered,

"Where the divided mind becomes whole."

"How does one enter?"

"Without possession."

"What does one find?"

"Nothing that can be carried away."

"Then why enter?"

Jesus smiled.

"Because the one who entered seeking possession does not leave."

Mariam waited.

Jesus continued,

"The person who leaves is not the same one who entered."

She asked,

"Is this death?"

"In one sense."

"Is it resurrection?"

"In another."

"Will the dead body rise?"

The Nazarene shook his head.

"Again you return to the corpse."

Mariam smiled.

"Then what rises?"

Jesus answered,

"Understanding."

"Compassion."

"Awareness."

"The human being hidden beneath conditioning."

"The Christ buried beneath the constructed self."

"This is resurrection before death."

The Greatest Mystery

Before departing the house, the Nazarene gave one final teaching.

He said,

"The greatest mystery is not that God became one man."

The disciples listened carefully.

"The greater mystery is that the Divine Image is hidden within every human being, yet almost no one recognizes it."

A disciple asked,

"Even within sinners?"

"Especially there must you learn to look carefully."

"Within enemies?"

"Yes."

"Within rulers?"

"Buried deeply, at times."

The disciples laughed.

Jesus continued,

"The image may be obscured."

"It may be buried beneath cruelty."

"It may be hidden beneath fear."

"It may be nearly invisible beneath years of hatred."

"But if you deny its possibility completely, you surrender that person forever to the archons."

Judas asked,

"And if they refuse awakening?"

"Then resist their cruelty."

"Without hatred?"

"Without hatred."

"Even if they seek your death?"

The Nazarene looked toward him.

For a moment neither spoke.

Then Jesus answered,

"Especially then will the teaching be tested."

Judas remembered these words.

Years later, when others cursed his name, he would remember them again.

Thus the Nazarene revealed the mystery of the Bridal Chamber.

It was not merely marriage.

Not merely ritual.

Not merely body.

Not merely spirit.

It was the reconciliation of divided consciousness.

The union of wisdom and compassion.

The joining of knowledge and love.

The ending of the war between inner and outer.

The discovery that difference need not become separation.

And wherever this sacred union occurred, the Nazarene taught that the Christ was born again.

Not once in history.

But wherever consciousness awakens.

Chapter Eleven

The Living Water

After teaching the mystery of the Bridal Chamber, the Nazarene traveled southward through the villages between Galilee and Judea.

He no longer remained unknown.

Stories traveled ahead of him.

Some said that he was a prophet.

Some said that he was a magician.

Some said that he had learned secret arts among the Persians.

Others said that he had studied among eastern contemplatives and returned corrupted by foreign teachings.

Some whispered that he was Elijah.

Others that he was Seth returned from the ancient world.

Still others began calling him the Christ.

Whenever these rumors reached him, the Nazarene said,

"People prefer deciding who the messenger is to hearing the message."

One disciple asked,

"Why?"

Jesus answered,

"Because a title can be worshiped without changing one's life."

The Woman at the Well

During one journey, the Nazarene and several companions passed through Samaria.

Some objected.

A disciple said,

"Teacher, there are safer roads."

Jesus answered,

"Safer from what?"

"From the Samaritans."

"Have they attacked us?"

"No."

"Then perhaps the danger is carried within you."

The disciple said nothing more.

Near midday they approached a well.

The sun stood high, and the travelers were tired.

A Samaritan woman came to draw water.

Seeing the Nazarene, she hesitated.

Jesus said,

"Will you give me something to drink?"

The woman looked at him suspiciously.

"You are a Jew."

"So I have been told."

She laughed despite herself.

"And I am a Samaritan."

"So I see."

"Your people say our worship is false."

"And your people say ours is corrupted."

The woman waited.

Jesus continued,

"Yet the water has not asked either of us which mountain is holy."

She looked down into the well.

"No."

Jesus said,

"Then give me water, and afterward we may discuss theology."

The woman laughed again and lowered the vessel.

After Jesus drank, she asked,

"Where should the Highest be worshiped?"

The disciples expected him to defend Jerusalem.

The woman expected him to condemn Mount Gerizim.

Instead the Nazarene asked,

"Where is the wind worshiped?"

She frowned.

"Nowhere."

"And everywhere?"

"Perhaps."

"Then why imprison the Hidden Father within geography?"

The woman said,

"Every people needs a holy place."

Jesus answered,

"Then let the holy place teach them holiness."

"But when people kill one another because each claims that the Infinite lives only upon their mountain, the mountain has become an idol."

She sat beside the well.

"Then Jerusalem is not the dwelling place of God?"

"The Nameless One has no address."

"And our mountain?"

"Also no address."

The woman smiled.

"You offend everyone equally."

Jesus answered,

"Truth is impartial."

The Water That Does Not Remain in the Jar

The woman asked,

"You speak of the Hidden Father. Can you give anything more useful than riddles?"

Jesus pointed toward her vessel.

"What happens to that water?"

"We drink it."

"And afterward?"

"We become thirsty again."

"Then there is another kind of water."

She looked into the well.

"Where?"

Jesus touched his chest.

"Within consciousness."

The woman became skeptical.

"Can thought remove thirst?"

"No."

"Then why call it water?"

"Because bodily thirst is not your only thirst."

He continued,

"You thirst to be seen."

"You thirst to be loved."

"You thirst for security."

"You thirst for certainty."

"You thirst for someone to tell you that you are righteous and another is wicked."

"You thirst for permanence in a world of change."

"You thirst for an identity that cannot be threatened."

The woman looked at him carefully.

"And you do not?"

Jesus answered,

"I have thirsts."

"Then you are not free."

"I did not say that every desire disappears."

"What, then, is freedom?"

"Not being dragged by every thirst that arises."

The woman considered this.

Jesus continued,

"The living water is awareness that knows desire without becoming its slave."

"It is wisdom that drinks without trying to own the well."

"It is love that gives without demanding possession."

"It is consciousness resting in the Source without constructing an idol of the Source."

The Five Husbands

The woman said,

"I have heard that prophets reveal secrets about strangers."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Do you wish to be entertained?"

"I wish to know whether you are truly a prophet."

Jesus answered,

"Bring your husband."

The woman became still.

"I have no husband."

"You have spoken truth."

The disciples looked at one another.

Jesus continued,

"You have joined your life to five men, and the one with whom you now live is not your husband."

The woman stared at him.

"Who told you?"

Jesus answered,

"Your neighbors speak loudly."

The woman burst into laughter.

The disciples were embarrassed.

The Nazarene smiled.

Then he said,

"But the deeper mystery is not your household."

"What is it?"

"You have also had five invisible husbands."

She raised an eyebrow.

"Now you are speaking in riddles again."

Jesus counted upon his fingers.

"Fear."

"Shame."

"Approval."

"Possession."

"Resentment."

The woman became quiet.

Jesus continued,

"Each promised protection."

"Each demanded obedience."

"Each became jealous when you approached freedom."

She asked,

"And the sixth?"

"The identity you have built from surviving the first five."

The woman looked away.

For some time neither spoke.

Then she asked,

"Must I destroy myself to become free?"

"No."

"Then what must I destroy?"

"The belief that the prison is your identity."

The Religion of Thirst

Later, as the companions continued their journey, one disciple asked,

"Master, why speak so openly with a Samaritan woman?"

Jesus stopped walking.

"Which part troubles you?"

"She is a Samaritan."

"That is geography."

"She is a woman."

"That is biology."

"Her life is disorderly."

"That is suffering."

The disciple said,

"She is not one of us."

Jesus asked,

"Who taught you where the Light ends?"

The disciple had no answer.

Jesus continued walking.

Then he said,

"Humanity has built religions around thirst."

"One group thirsts for purity."

"Another for certainty."

"Another for victory."

"Another for chosenness."

"Another for immortality."

"Another for revenge disguised as justice."

"They carry empty jars to different wells and fight over whose rope is sacred."

A disciple asked,

"Is religion useless?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Is a cup useless?"

"No."

"Then use it to drink."

"Do not strike your neighbor with it."

The Beggar and the Priest

Near a village they encountered a man lying beside the road.

His clothing was torn.

His feet were wounded.

He asked for water.

A priest traveling ahead of the Nazarene's group had passed him without stopping.

One disciple said,

"Perhaps the priest feared ritual impurity."

Jesus knelt beside the injured man.

He washed the man's feet and gave him water.

Then he said,

"Purity that fears compassion is impurity wearing ceremonial robes."

The injured man drank.

Jesus asked,

"Where are you going?"

"Jerusalem."

"Why?"

"To offer sacrifice."

The Nazarene looked at his wounded feet.

"First heal."

"But I made a vow."

"Then perhaps the Hidden Father prefers that you arrive alive."

The man laughed weakly.

The companions helped carry him toward the nearest village.

That evening the Nazarene said,

"Whenever doctrine requires you to become less compassionate, examine the doctrine."

A disciple asked,

"Even if it comes from scripture?"

Jesus answered,

"Especially then must you understand what you are reading."

The Letter and the Water

A scribe challenged him in another village.

"You speak as though compassion stands above the Law."

The Nazarene replied,

"What is the purpose of the Law?"

"Obedience to God."

"And what does God desire?"

"Righteousness."

"What is righteousness?"

The scribe began quoting.

Jesus interrupted gently.

"I asked what it is, not where it is written."

The scribe became angry.

"You disrespect scripture."

The Nazarene answered,

"No. I disrespect the use of scripture as a shield against understanding."

The scribe said,

"The letters are holy."

Jesus pointed toward a jar of water.

"If I write the word water upon a stone, will the thirsty man live by licking the letters?"

The crowd laughed.

The scribe did not.

Jesus continued,

"Scripture points."

"Wisdom drinks."

"The fool worships the inscription while dying beside the well."

The River and the Self

Several days later the Nazarene brought his disciples to a river.

He asked Peter,

"Is this the same river you saw yesterday?"

Peter answered,

"Yes."

Jesus said,

"The water is different."

"But it is the same river."

"The banks have changed slightly."

"It remains the same river."

"Fish have entered and departed."

"Still the same."

Jesus smiled.

"Then tell me where the river itself is."

Peter looked confused.

Jesus continued,

"You also say, 'I am the same person who was a child.'"

"Yet your body has changed."

"Your thoughts have changed."

"Your desires have changed."

"Your memories have changed."

"Your beliefs have changed."

"Where is the permanent owner?"

Peter answered,

"My soul."

Jesus asked,

"Have you seen it?"

Peter hesitated.

"No."

"Then perhaps you have given a name to what you have not examined."

Peter asked,

"Do we not possess souls?"

The Nazarene sat beside the river.

"Be careful with the word possess."

"Who is the possessor?"

Peter was silent.

Jesus continued,

"The person is more like this river than a stone."

"Causes flow into causes."

"Memories shape desires."

"Desires shape actions."

"Actions shape habits."

"Habits shape perception."

"Perception strengthens identity."

"Identity produces new desires and fears."

"Thus the river of becoming continues."

Peter asked,

"Then who is reborn?"

Jesus answered,

"Who is the river?"

Peter frowned.

The Nazarene smiled.

"Do not answer too quickly."

Resurrection and Continuity

That evening the disciples returned to the question of death.

One asked,

"If there is no permanent self as we imagine it, what continues after death?"

Jesus lit one lamp from another.

He extinguished the first.

"Is the second flame the same as the first?"

The disciples disagreed.

Some said yes.

Others said no.

Jesus said,

"Both answers become false when grasped absolutely."

One disciple asked,

"Then what continues?"

"Cause into consequence."

"Pattern into pattern."

"Attachment into becoming."

"Awareness conditioned by what has been cultivated."

The disciple asked,

"Is this resurrection?"

"No."

"Then what is resurrection?"

"Awakening from the cycle that makes repeated becoming necessary."

Another said,

"But many among our people await the restoration of their bodies."

The Nazarene replied,

"They imagine liberation as the return of everything familiar."

"Is that wrong?"

"It is understandable."

"But understandable is not the same as true."

The disciple asked,

"Then the dead shall not rise from graves?"

Jesus answered,

"The earth returns bodies to the earth."

"Do not insult the mystery of life by demanding that dust repeat an old arrangement forever."

The Spring Beneath the Temple

As the journey continued, the Nazarene became increasingly critical of those who sold access to holiness.

He said,

"The Hidden Father has no treasury."

"The Light charges no entrance fee."

"The sun does not demand payment before rising."

"The rain does not inspect theology before falling."

"Why, then, have humans built markets around the sacred?"

A disciple answered,

"Temples require support."

Jesus nodded.

"Buildings require support."

"Priests must eat."

"Travelers need shelter."

"Communities require organization."

"These are ordinary truths."

He then became stern.

"But when ordinary needs disguise themselves as divine necessity, exploitation begins."

"When the poor believe the Infinite will reject them unless they purchase the favor of priests, the well has been fenced."

"When rulers claim Heaven requires obedience to their throne, the river has been dammed."

"When teachers make disciples dependent upon their personalities, living water has been bottled and sold."

Judas, who had listened carefully, asked,

"Will you confront the Temple?"

Jesus looked toward the southern road.

"Yes."

The disciples became uneasy.

Peter said,

"The Temple authorities are powerful."

"So are storms."

"Storms do not arrest people."

Jesus smiled faintly.

"Then perhaps the authorities are more dangerous."

Judas asked,

"When will we go?"

"When the teaching is ready."

"And when will that be?"

The Nazarene looked toward Jerusalem.

"Soon."

The Last Cup

Before leaving the region, Jesus returned once more to the Samaritan well.

The woman he had met was there with several others.

She greeted him.

"Jew, have you come to insult both our mountains again?"

Jesus laughed.

"Only if necessary."

She gave him water.

After drinking, he returned the cup.

The woman asked,

"Have you found the living water?"

Jesus answered,

"It was never lost."

"Then why do so few drink?"

"Because people search for distant wells."

She looked toward her companions.

"These people came because I told them about you."

Jesus said,

"Then do not make them dependent upon me."

One of them asked,

"Are you not the Savior?"

The Nazarene answered,

"From what?"

"From death."

Jesus shook his head.

"Learn first to be saved from ignorance."

Another asked,

"Are you the Christ?"

The woman smiled, already knowing how he would answer.

Jesus pointed toward the water.

"Drink."

The man frowned.

"I asked you a question."

"And I gave you water."

"What does that mean?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Experience before title."

"Transformation before worship."

"Awakening before doctrine."

He then turned to the woman.

"You understand."

She said,

"I understand that you avoid simple answers."

Jesus laughed.

"That also."

Then the Nazarene and his companions continued southward.

Behind them remained the well.

Before them waited Jerusalem.

And beneath every doctrine, every nation, every temple, every identity, and every world, the Living Water continued flowing from the Nameless Source.

No priest owned it.

No scripture contained it.

No god could monopolize it.

No archon could destroy it.

And whoever drank deeply from it began to awaken from the long thirst of the worlds.

Chapter Twelve

The Prison of the Mind

As the Nazarene journeyed toward Judea, he began speaking more openly concerning the powers that bind humanity.

The people expected him to speak of Rome.

And he did.

They expected him to speak of corrupt rulers.

And he did.

They expected him to condemn priests who used religion for wealth and power.

And he did.

Yet he also spoke of a more intimate tyranny.

He said,

"Rome may command your body."

"A ruler may take your property."

"A priest may burden your conscience."

"But there is a prison that travels with the prisoner."

A man in the crowd asked,

"What prison is this?"

The Nazarene touched his forehead.

"The world you have built here and forgotten that you built."

The people did not understand.

So Jesus told them a story.

The Prisoner Without Walls

"There was a man imprisoned for many years in a dark chamber.

"Every day a guard brought him bread.

"Every night he heard the door close.

"At last the guard died.

"No one replaced him.

"The door remained unlocked.

"But the prisoner continued sitting in darkness.

"Years passed.

"One day a child entered the abandoned prison and found him.

"The child asked, 'Why do you remain here?'

"The prisoner answered, 'Because I am imprisoned.'

"The child opened the door.

"But the man became afraid.

"He said, 'Close it. The world outside is dangerous.'

"The child asked, 'Who is your jailer?'

"The prisoner answered, 'I do not know.'

"Then the child said, 'Perhaps your jailer died before your prison did.'"

When the Nazarene finished, the crowd became silent.

He said,

"Many prisons survive their builders."

The Archons Within

The disciples had heard Jesus speak of the archons, the rulers of the lower worlds.

Some imagined monstrous beings dwelling among the stars.

Others imagined invisible kings seated upon heavenly thrones.

Some believed them to be angels who had forgotten the Source.

Others understood them as forces within consciousness.

One evening Peter asked,

"Master, where are the archons?"

Jesus answered,

"Where do you experience their rule?"

Peter said,

"In the world."

"Where in the world?"

"In kingdoms."

"Where else?"

"In corrupt temples."

"Where else?"

Peter hesitated.

Jesus touched his chest.

"Here also."

Peter frowned.

"Are the archons inside us?"

The Nazarene replied,

"The distinction between inner and outer is not as simple as you imagine."

He continued,

"A ruler builds a kingdom from fear."

"Fear enters the people."

"The people teach fear to their children."

"The children grow and build new institutions shaped by fear."

"Where, then, is the archon?"

Peter answered,

"Everywhere in the chain."

Jesus nodded.

"Now you understand."

The Seven Chains

The Nazarene taught that the human mind is commonly bound by seven great chains.

He did not always name them in the same order, for he said that different chains become stronger in different people.

But among them he named:

Fear.

Craving.

Hatred.

Pride.

Shame.

Possession.

And ignorance.

A disciple asked,

"Which is the greatest?"

Jesus answered,

"Ignorance, because the others hide within it."

Another asked,

"Which is the most dangerous?"

"The one you refuse to see in yourself."

A wealthy man said,

"I am not ruled by craving."

Jesus asked,

"How much land do you own?"

The man named his properties.

"How much is enough?"

The man began explaining his business affairs.

Jesus smiled.

"I did not ask how much you own."

"I asked how much is enough."

The man became silent.

Fear

The Nazarene said,

"Fear is among the oldest rulers."

"It protects the animal."

"It imprisons the human."

A soldier asked,

"Should we have no fear?"

Jesus answered,

"If a lion approaches, fear may save your body."

"But if no lion is present and you spend your life imagining lions, fear has become your master."

The soldier asked,

"How does a ruler use fear?"

Jesus replied,

"He creates an enemy large enough that people surrender freedom for protection."

A priest nearby asked,

"And how does religion use fear?"

The Nazarene looked at him.

"By creating an eternal punishment large enough that people surrender conscience for certainty."

The priest became angry.

"Do you deny judgment?"

"No."

"Then you admit punishment."

"I admit consequence."

"What is the difference?"

Jesus answered,

"Consequence teaches that actions bear fruit."

"Tyranny imagines infinite cruelty as justice."

The priest said,

"God punishes his enemies."

The Nazarene replied,

"Then your god behaves like Caesar with a longer prison sentence."

The crowd murmured.

The priest departed.

Craving

Another day Jesus entered a marketplace.

Merchants shouted from every direction.

Fine clothing hung from stalls.

Spices filled the air.

Coins changed hands.

Animals cried from cages.

The Nazarene stood quietly watching.

A disciple asked,

"Do you condemn trade?"

"No."

"Then what are you observing?"

"The manufacture of dissatisfaction."

The disciple did not understand.

Jesus pointed toward a merchant praising an expensive garment.

"That man does not merely sell cloth."

"What does he sell?"

"The idea that the buyer becomes greater by wearing it."

They continued walking.

A seller of perfumes called to wealthy women.

Jesus said,

"He sells fear of being undesirable."

Another merchant displayed imported ornaments.

"He sells status."

A fortune-teller offered predictions.

"He sells certainty."

A preacher nearby warned of divine punishment.

"He sells fear."

The disciple asked,

"Then is everything commerce?"

Jesus answered,

"When desire becomes identity, the whole world becomes a marketplace."

Hatred

In one village the Nazarene encountered two families who had hated one another for three generations.

Few remembered how the conflict began.

One family claimed that an ancestor had stolen land.

The other claimed that the land had been given freely.

Several men had been injured in fights.

One had died.

Children were taught whom to hate before they understood why.

Jesus gathered members of both families.

He asked the eldest man,

"Who began the conflict?"

"My grandfather's brother was cheated."

The Nazarene asked a man from the other family.

"Who began it?"

"His family attacked mine."

Jesus asked,

"Who among you witnessed the beginning?"

No one answered.

Then he called forward two young boys, one from each family.

"Do you hate one another?"

The first looked toward his father.

The second did the same.

Jesus said,

"Do not look at them."

The boys looked at each other.

One shrugged.

"No."

The other said,

"We are supposed to."

Jesus turned toward the adults.

"Behold how an archon is born."

Pride

The Nazarene taught that pride was not merely thinking well of oneself.

He said,

"Healthy dignity stands upright."

"Pride needs another person beneath its feet."

A religious scholar asked,

"Is it pride to know that our people possess the truth?"

Jesus answered,

"How do you know?"

"Because our scripture says so."

"And how do you know your scripture is correct?"

"Because it was given by God."

"How do you know?"

"Because the scripture says so."

The Nazarene smiled.

The scholar became angry.

"You mock revelation."

Jesus replied,

"No. I reveal circular reasoning."

The scholar said,

"Then nothing can be known."

"I did not say that."

"What do you say?"

"Hold knowledge with humility."

"Why?"

"Because the finite mind easily mistakes confidence for truth."

Shame

The Nazarene distinguished remorse from shame.

He said,

"Remorse says, 'I have done harm.'"

"Shame says, 'I am nothing but harm.'"

"Remorse can repair."

"Shame often hides."

A woman asked,

"Should the guilty not feel shame?"

Jesus answered,

"Will shame restore what was stolen?"

"No."

"Will it heal the wounded?"

"No."

"Will it raise the murdered?"

"No."

"Then let guilt become responsibility."

"Confess truth."

"Repair what can be repaired."

"Accept consequences."

"Change conduct."

"But do not build an identity around corruption, for the person who says, 'I am evil by nature,' may eventually use identity as an excuse to remain unchanged."

Possession

Jesus often spoke against possession, but many misunderstood him.

Some believed he commanded everyone to abandon every object.

He corrected them.

"A craftsman may possess tools."

"A family may possess a house."

"A farmer may tend land."

"The question is whether possession serves life or life serves possession."

A man asked,

"How do I know whether something possesses me?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Imagine losing it."

The man became uncomfortable.

Jesus said,

"Your reaction has answered."

Ignorance

Of ignorance the Nazarene spoke most carefully.

He said,

"Ignorance is not the absence of information."

"A scholar may possess many facts and remain deeply ignorant."

"What, then, is ignorance?" asked Judas.

The Nazarene answered,

"Taking the conditioned for the ultimate."

"The changing for the permanent."

"The image for the reality."

"The name for the thing."

"The ego for the self."

"The ruler for the Source."

"The map for the land."

"The doctrine for awakening."

Judas said,

"Then Yaldabaoth is ignorance."

Jesus replied,

"Yaldabaoth is the cosmic image of this error."

"Does he truly exist?"

The other disciples turned toward Jesus.

The Nazarene smiled.

"You ask this question often."

"Because you do not answer it."

"I answer differently because existence has more than one manner."

Judas waited.

Jesus continued,

"Does Rome exist?"

"Yes."

"Does Rome exist as stones?"

"Partly."

"As soldiers?"

"Partly."

"As laws?"

"Partly."

"As fear?"

"Partly."

"As an idea?"

"Yes."

"Then where is Rome itself?"

Judas understood.

Jesus said,

"Do not imagine that a power must possess flesh to become real."

The Collective Dream

The Nazarene taught that human beings build shared worlds from collective belief.

He said,

"A coin is metal."

"Yet armies move because of it."

"A border is an agreement."

"Yet people die crossing it."

"A crown is an object."

"Yet thousands kneel before the person wearing it."

"A title is sound."

"Yet one title causes doors to open and another causes chains to close."

A disciple asked,

"Are these things illusions?"

Jesus answered,

"An illusion can still kill."

"Then they are real?"

"They are conditionally real."

The disciple sighed.

"You make everything difficult."

Jesus laughed.

"No. Reality was difficult before I arrived."

The Pharisees Who Opposed Him

As the Nazarene's reputation grew, a particular faction among the Pharisees began following his movements.

Not all Pharisees opposed him.

Some listened sympathetically.

Some shared his concern for justice.

Some invited him to meals and debated him respectfully.

The Nazarene warned his disciples never to condemn an entire people or school because of the actions of a faction.

He said,

"When you turn a group into one face, you have already begun lying."

Yet among his opponents were several powerful leaders who considered him dangerous.

They were disturbed by his rejection of bodily resurrection.

They were angered by his teaching concerning the God beyond the creator.

They were offended by his fellowship with foreigners.

They feared his criticism of religious authority.

Most of all, they feared the growing number of people who listened to him.

Two among these leaders became particularly determined to destroy him.

Their names were remembered differently among the hidden communities, and the compiler of this Gospel does not preserve them.

For the purpose is not to condemn their descendants.

It is enough to know what they did.

One said,

"If this Nazarene continues, the people will abandon the traditions."

The other answered,

"Then he must be silenced before the feast."

Unknown to them, their words would return upon their own heads.

For the cross they prepared for another would become their own.

The Door Without a Guard

That evening Judas approached the Nazarene privately.

"The opposition is becoming organized."

"I know."

"They are watching us."

"I know."

"Then why continue toward Jerusalem?"

Jesus looked toward the road.

"Because fear cannot choose the direction of my feet."

Judas said,

"They may kill you."

"They may try."

Judas noticed the wording.

"Try?"

The Nazarene looked at him.

For a moment Judas felt that Jesus was about to reveal something.

Instead the Nazarene said,

"Not every appearance tells the truth."

Judas remembered the saying.

He would understand it later.

Before sleeping, Jesus gathered the disciples.

He said,

"The archons possess only the power given to them by unconscious participation."

"Some prisons require resistance."

"Some require escape."

"Some require endurance."

"Some disappear through understanding."

"Learn which prison stands before you."

Peter asked,

"And what if the prison is death?"

The Nazarene answered,

"First discover who is imprisoned."

The disciples became silent.

Jesus continued,

"The rulers can threaten the body."

"They can threaten reputation."

"They can threaten property."

"They can threaten belonging."

"They can threaten every identity you fear to lose."

"But the door without a guard remains within awareness."

"Find it before the hour of testing."

That night the disciples slept.

The Nazarene remained awake beneath the stars.

Far to the south stood Jerusalem.

Within the city, plans were already forming.

The rulers believed they were closing a trap.

The Nazarene knew that a trap built from appearances could itself be deceived by appearance.

And beyond the sight of humanity, messengers of the higher realms had begun to draw near.

Chapter Thirteen

The Seven Archons

As the Nazarene continued southward, he began revealing more concerning the rulers whom the hidden traditions called the archons.

He did not teach these things openly to every crowd.

For he said,

"If you tell a frightened person that invisible rulers surround him, you may increase his chains rather than break them."

Judas asked,

"Then why teach us?"

"Because you have already begun seeing the chains."

"And what are the archons?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Listen carefully, and do not reduce mystery to one explanation."

They were walking through a narrow valley when he spoke these words.

"The archons may be understood as rulers of the lower heavens."

"They may be understood as collective powers formed through ignorance."

"They may be understood as patterns repeated through generations."

"They may be understood as structures of domination."

"They may be understood as movements within the mind."

"And they may be all these things at once."

Peter asked,

"How can one thing exist in many forms?"

Jesus pointed toward the shadow cast by a tree.

"What creates the shadow?"

"The tree."

"And the sun."

"And the ground."

"And your position as observer."

Peter nodded.

Jesus said,

"Then perhaps some realities arise through relationships rather than existing as isolated objects."

The First Archon: The Ruler of Fear

The Nazarene said,

"The first ruler whispers: You are unsafe."

"Sometimes this is true."

"The body requires warning."

"But the ruler continues speaking after danger has passed."

"He says:

"'The stranger is dangerous.'

"'The foreigner is dangerous.'

"'The questioner is dangerous.'

"'Freedom is dangerous.'

"'Change is dangerous.'

"'The person who disagrees with you is dangerous.'"

A disciple asked,

"How is this ruler defeated?"

Jesus answered,

"Not by recklessness."

"Then how?"

"By seeing danger accurately."

"Fear enlarges shadows."

"Wisdom measures them."

A young man said,

"My father taught me to fear God."

The Nazarene asked,

"Has this fear made you compassionate?"

"No."

"Has it made you truthful?"

"Sometimes it makes me hide."

"Has it made you love the Hidden Father?"

"I do not know."

Jesus said,

"Then perhaps you fear punishment rather than love truth."

The young man asked,

"Should there be no reverence?"

"Reverence opens the heart."

"Terror closes it."

"Do not confuse them."

The Second Archon: The Ruler of Desire

The Nazarene said,

"The second ruler whispers: You will become complete when you obtain one more thing."

"A larger house."

"Another field."

"Another lover."

"Another title."

"Another victory."

"Another spiritual experience."

At this, Mariam asked,

"Can spiritual seeking become craving?"

Jesus smiled.

"It often does."

"How?"

"The seeker begins collecting visions as the merchant collects coins."

"He boasts of revelations."

"He compares experiences."

"He desires secret names."

"He wants to become more enlightened than his neighbor."

"Then even heaven becomes merchandise."

Judas asked,

"How is this ruler overcome?"

Jesus answered,

"By learning the difference between enjoyment and possession."

"Eat when food is given."

"Be grateful."

"Love deeply."

"Create beautiful things."

"Rest when tired."

"But do not demand that changing things provide permanent completion."

The Third Archon: The Ruler of Hatred

The Nazarene said,

"The third ruler is easily recognized in enemies and rarely recognized in friends."

A disciple asked,

"What does this mean?"

"When your enemy hates, you call it evil."

"When your group hates, you call it justice."

The disciples became quiet.

Jesus continued,

"Hatred is skilled at changing clothing."

"It wears the armor of patriotism."

"The robes of religion."

"The language of purity."

"The vocabulary of revolution."

"The mask of righteousness."

"Examine it by its fruit."

Peter asked,

"Should injustice not be opposed?"

"It must be opposed."

"Can we fight?"

"There are many forms of struggle."

"What if force becomes necessary to protect the innocent?"

The Nazarene answered carefully,

"Then act to stop harm, not to worship vengeance."

"How can we know the difference?"

"When the threat has ended, ask whether you still hunger to cause suffering."

Peter lowered his eyes.

Jesus said,

"Resistance may be necessary."

"Cruelty is never made holy merely by choosing the correct enemy."

The Fourth Archon: The Ruler of False Identity

Jesus said,

"The fourth ruler asks, 'Who are you?'"

"Then he answers before you can discover it."

"He says:

"'You are your nation.'

"'You are your tribe.'

"'You are your occupation.'

"'You are your reputation.'

"'You are your wounds.'

"'You are your sins.'

"'You are what others have called you.'"

Mariam asked,

"Are these identities false?"

"They are incomplete."

"Is it wrong to belong to a people?"

"No."

"To love one's culture?"

"No."

"To remember one's ancestors?"

"No."

"Then where is the chain?"

"When the garment forgets that it is worn."

She understood.

Jesus continued,

"The false self is built from memory, reaction, expectation, fear, and desire."

"It is not unreal in the sense that nothing occurs."

"It is unreal in the sense that it has no independent permanence."

"It changes."

"It defends itself."

"It tells stories about itself."

"Then it forgets that they are stories."

Judas asked,

"Who sees the story?"

Jesus looked at him.

"Remain with that question."

The Fifth Archon: The Ruler of Authority

The Nazarene said,

"The fifth ruler whispers: Obey because I stand above you."

A disciple asked,

"Is all authority evil?"

"No."

"Parents guide children."

"Teachers guide students."

"Communities appoint servants."

"Builders follow plans."

"Ships require coordination."

"Then what is corrupt authority?"

Jesus answered,

"Authority that exists to preserve itself rather than serve life."

He continued,

"A true teacher prepares the student to stand."

"A false teacher makes standing feel like betrayal."

"A true ruler protects the people."

"A false ruler teaches the people that they exist for the ruler."

"A true priest opens a door."

"A false priest stands before the door and charges admission."

A disciple asked,

"How shall we recognize false spiritual authority?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Ask what happens when you question it."

The Sixth Archon: The Ruler of Certainty

The Nazarene said,

"The sixth ruler is subtle."

"He offers relief from uncertainty."

"He says:

"'Your book contains everything.'

"'Your teacher cannot be mistaken.'

"'Your interpretation is final.'

"'Your people alone understand.'

"'Doubt is rebellion.'

"'Questions are dangerous.'"

A scribe traveling with them objected.

"Without certainty, how can anyone live?"

Jesus answered,

"Do you know with certainty that the sun will rise tomorrow?"

The scribe said,

"It always has."

"That is confidence from experience."

"Is it certainty?"

The scribe hesitated.

Jesus continued,

"You cross bridges without knowing every stone."

"You eat food without understanding every process of digestion."

"You love people without possessing certainty that they will remain."

"Life requires trust."

"Certainty is another matter."

The scribe asked,

"Do you know nothing with certainty?"

Jesus answered,

"I know suffering should not be increased unnecessarily."

"Is that absolute knowledge?"

"It is sufficient knowledge for today's work."

The Seventh Archon: The Ruler of Forgetfulness

Finally the Nazarene spoke of the seventh ruler.

"This one is the deepest."

"It does not always frighten."

"It does not always tempt."

"It simply causes forgetting."

"Forgetting what?" asked Peter.

"That the map is not the land."

"That the image is not the Light."

"That the ruler is not the Source."

"That the role is not the actor."

"That the thought is not the thinker."

"That the self you defend is a process."

"That every stranger shares the mystery of consciousness."

"That life is brief."

"That death is certain."

"That compassion matters."

"That awakening is possible."

Judas asked,

"Is this ruler Yaldabaoth?"

Jesus replied,

"Yaldabaoth is forgetfulness crowned as king."

The Heavens of the Rulers

That night, beside a fire, the disciples asked Jesus to speak of the heavenly archons.

Peter said,

"Until now you have described the rulers as though they are psychological powers."

Jesus answered,

"I warned you not to reduce the teaching."

"Then there are truly rulers in the heavens?"

"There are orders of beings beyond ordinary human perception."

"Are they gods?"

"Some are called gods."

"Are they immortal?"

"Nothing conditioned is without change."

"Are they more powerful than humans?"

"Some greatly so."

"Should we worship them?"

"No."

"Even the good ones?"

"Respect is not worship."

Peter asked,

"Can a heavenly being possess wisdom?"

"Yes."

"Compassion?"

"Yes."

"Can one assist humanity?"

"Yes."

"Then why not worship such a being?"

The Nazarene looked toward the stars.

"Would a wise teacher ask the student to remain permanently kneeling?"

Peter answered,

"No."

"Then why assume a wise heavenly being desires slavery?"

The God of Israel and the Brahma Realm

One disciple finally asked the question many had feared to speak.

"Master, is the God of Israel one of these rulers?"

The Nazarene remained silent for a long time.

The fire cracked.

No one moved.

At last Jesus said,

"The God who entered covenant with Israel is a great ruler within the heavens of becoming."

The disciples became uneasy.

Peter asked,

"Then Moses was deceived?"

"Not entirely."

"How can revelation be partly true?"

Jesus held up a cup.

"Does this cup contain water?"

"Yes."

"Does it contain the river?"

"No."

"Then something may truly contain water without containing the whole river."

He continued,

"The God of our ancestors gave laws suitable for a people in history."

"Some laws restrained violence."

"Some created identity."

"Some preserved community."

"Some reflected the limitations of their age."

"Some words attributed to the ruler arose from human fear."

"Some from political ambition."

"Some from genuine encounter."

"Scripture is a river carrying many streams."

A disciple said,

"But the Lord declared that there is no God beside him."

Jesus answered,

"So speaks the Brahma king who awakens within a radiant realm and sees no throne above his own."

The disciple trembled.

"Then our God is ignorant?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Great power and complete knowledge are not the same."

"Is he evil?"

"No being should be reduced carelessly to one word."

"Then what is he?"

"A ruler."

"A creator within conditions."

"A lawgiver."

"A guardian of a people."

"A being capable of justice and wrath."

"A heavenly intelligence whose knowledge does not reach the Nameless Source."

The disciple asked,

"Does he know the Hidden Father?"

Jesus replied,

"To the degree that ignorance has been overcome."

"Can gods awaken?"

Jesus smiled.

"Why should awakening belong only to humans?"

Above Every God

The Nazarene stood.

The disciples watched him.

He lifted his hands toward the night sky.

"Above the God of Israel is the Mystery."

"Above the gods of the nations is the Mystery."

"Above the Brahma kings is the Mystery."

"Above the angels is the Mystery."

"Above the Aeons as you imagine them is the Mystery."

"Beyond Barbelo as your mind pictures Barbelo is the Mystery."

"Beyond every heaven."

"Beyond every name."

"Beyond existence as the mind understands existence."

"No sacrifice feeds it."

"No praise enlarges it."

"No doubt diminishes it."

"No temple contains it."

"No scripture exhausts it."

"No priest controls access to it."

"No prophet owns it."

"Not even I."

The disciples were astonished.

Judas asked,

"Then why have you come?"

The Nazarene lowered his hands.

"To remind sleepers that the prison is not ultimate."

The Archon Who Pretends to Be Christ

Jesus then gave them a warning.

"One day people will use my name as an archon."

The disciples protested.

"How can that be?"

"They will say, 'Submit because Jesus commands it.'"

"They will say, 'Kill because Jesus requires it.'"

"They will say, 'Obey the ruler because Jesus established his throne.'"

"They will say, 'Give wealth because Jesus needs it.'"

"They will say, 'Do not question because Jesus has spoken through us.'"

Peter said,

"We would never permit this."

The Nazarene looked sadly at him.

"You will not remain forever."

Peter lowered his eyes.

Jesus continued,

"Every liberator can become the mask of a new ruler when memory becomes institution and institution fears freedom."

Judas asked,

"How can this be prevented?"

"It cannot be prevented completely."

"Then what can be done?"

"Preserve the poison against idolatry within the teaching."

"What poison?"

Jesus answered,

"Tell them that the Christ is not one person."

"Tell them that everyone may awaken."

"Tell them that no institution owns the Light."

"Tell them that my words must be tested by compassion and direct realization."

"Tell them that if they use my name to create slaves, they serve the archons."

Judas nodded slowly.

"I will remember."

Jesus looked at him.

"Yes."

"You will."

The Secret Sign

Before dawn, the Nazarene awakened Judas and led him away from the others.

They walked until they reached a hill overlooking the road toward Jerusalem.

Jesus said,

"The time approaches when appearance and reality will separate."

Judas asked,

"What do you mean?"

"You will be accused of what you must do."

"What must I do?"

"Not yet."

"Why tell me this?"

"Because when the hour comes, you must remember that the crowd sees only the surface."

Judas became troubled.

"Will I betray you?"

The Nazarene answered,

"You will betray the image others have made of me."

"And you?"

Jesus looked toward the first light appearing in the east.

"The Son of the Living Generation cannot be handed over by a kiss."

Judas did not understand.

Then the rising sun appeared.

For a moment the Nazarene stood before it, his figure surrounded by light.

Judas saw something he would never forget.

Not with the eyes of flesh alone.

Behind Jesus stood another form.

Ancient.

Radiant.

Crowned not with gold but with the brilliance of the sun.

Judas fell to the ground.

Jesus said,

"Rise."

Judas looked again.

The vision had disappeared.

"Who was that?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The one whom I remember."

"Seth?"

Jesus remained silent.

Judas asked,

"Are you Seth?"

The Nazarene replied,

"The wave asks whether it is the sea."

"Master, speak plainly."

Jesus smiled.

"When the hour comes, you will understand enough."

Then they returned to the others.

The road to Jerusalem waited before them.

The seven rulers moved through institutions, fears, desires, hatreds, identities, certainties, and forgetfulness.

The faction opposing the Nazarene prepared its accusations.

The Temple authorities watched.

Rome waited with its instruments of execution.

And Judas carried a secret he did not yet understand.

For the drama of the cross had already begun long before the wood was raised.

Chapter Fourteen

The Law and Freedom

As the Nazarene drew nearer to Judea, disputes concerning the Law followed him from village to village.

Some said,

"He has come to destroy Moses."

Others said,

"He teaches foreigners against the covenant."

Still others claimed,

"He wishes to make every person a law unto himself."

When these accusations reached the Nazarene, he said,

"The person who hears freedom and imagines chaos has usually known only obedience."

A scholar of the Law approached him publicly.

"Do you reject Moses?"

Jesus answered,

"No."

"Do you accept every command attributed to him?"

Jesus replied,

"That is another question."

The scholar frowned.

"How can you honor Moses while questioning the Law?"

The Nazarene asked,

"Do you honor your father?"

"Yes."

"Did your father understand everything perfectly?"

The scholar hesitated.

"No."

"Then honor does not require pretending that the limited is unlimited."

The scholar said,

"Moses spoke with God."

Jesus answered,

"Many people have encountered powers greater than themselves."

"Encounter with greatness does not mean encounter with the Ultimate."

The crowd murmured.

The scholar asked,

"Then who spoke to Moses?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The ruler of the covenant."

"The God of our ancestors?"

"Yes."

"Yaldabaoth?"

Jesus remained silent for a moment.

Then he said,

"Names become dangerous when they convince you that mystery has been captured."

The scholar pressed him.

"Was the God of Moses the Highest God?"

"No."

The crowd became still.

The Nazarene continued,

"The Highest cannot be possessed by one mountain."

"The Highest cannot become the tribal property of one people."

"The Highest does not become greater through sacrifice."

"The Highest is not threatened by questions."

"The Highest does not require blood to overcome anger."

"The God encountered by our ancestors was a heavenly ruler."

"A mighty ruler."

"A giver of law."

"A shaper of history."

"But not the Nameless Source beyond every heaven."

The scholar said,

"Then you blaspheme."

Jesus answered,

"If telling a king that he is not the Infinite is blasphemy, then humility itself is blasphemy."

The Purpose of Law

The Nazarene did not teach lawlessness.

He said,

"Every community requires agreements."

"Children require guidance."

"Violence must be restrained."

"The weak must be protected from the strong."

"Promises must have meaning."

"Justice must be sought."

"But law is a tool."

"When the tool becomes an idol, humanity is sacrificed to preserve the instrument made to serve humanity."

A Pharisee asked,

"Is the Sabbath merely a tool?"

Jesus answered,

"The Sabbath is a gift."

"Then must it be obeyed?"

"Use the gift."

"That is not an answer."

Jesus smiled.

"It is the only answer that prevents the gift from becoming a chain."

The Man with the Injured Hand

On a Sabbath the Nazarene entered a gathering place where a man sat with an injured hand.

His fingers had become twisted after an accident.

He could no longer practice his trade.

Several opponents watched Jesus carefully.

One asked,

"Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?"

The Nazarene replied,

"Is healing labor?"

"It may be."

"Is compassion forbidden labor?"

The man answered,

"The Law determines what is permitted."

Jesus turned toward the injured worker.

"What work did you perform?"

"I shaped clay vessels."

"Can you work now?"

"No."

"How does your family eat?"

"My brother helps us."

The Nazarene turned toward the scholars.

"If his hand can be restored today, why should his children wait until tomorrow?"

One said,

"Because obedience must come before desire."

Jesus answered,

"Compassion is not merely desire."

The scholar replied,

"The command is clear."

Jesus said,

"Then your interpretation has made the command clearer than mercy."

He approached the injured man.

The Nazarene took the damaged hand between his own.

He massaged the stiff joints.

He instructed the man to move the fingers gradually.

Whether through skill learned among eastern healers, through the man's own remaining strength, through the power of faith, or through a mystery unknown to those present, movement returned where movement had been limited.

The man wept.

The Nazarene said,

"Continue the exercises each morning."

But his opponents departed, discussing not the restored hand, but the violation they believed had occurred.

Jesus watched them leave.

Then he said,

"An archon can make a healed hand appear less important than a broken rule."

The Letter and the Spirit

That evening a disciple asked,

"Master, if laws may be questioned, how do we know what is good?"

Jesus answered,

"Begin with suffering."

"What does that mean?"

"Observe what increases unnecessary suffering."

"Observe what reduces it."

"Observe what strengthens domination."

"Observe what strengthens freedom joined with responsibility."

"Observe what makes the heart more cruel."

"Observe what makes compassion possible."

The disciple asked,

"Is compassion the only law?"

"No."

"What else?"

"Wisdom."

"Why?"

"Because compassion without wisdom may preserve the conditions that produce suffering."

"And wisdom without compassion?"

"Becomes another form of coldness."

The disciple smiled.

"The Bridal Chamber."

Jesus nodded.

"The marriage must continue everywhere."

The Adulterous Woman

In another village, several men brought a woman before the Nazarene.

They accused her of adultery.

One said,

"The Law commands punishment."

Jesus asked,

"Where is the man?"

The accuser replied,

"What man?"

"The one with whom she committed adultery."

The men looked at one another.

Jesus said,

"Was she alone while committing it?"

Some in the crowd laughed.

The accusers became angry.

One said,

"We are speaking of her guilt."

The Nazarene replied,

"And I am speaking of your selective justice."

The oldest accuser said,

"Will you judge her or not?"

Jesus stooped and wrote in the dust.

No one could see what he wrote.

At last he stood.

"The one among you who has never concealed wrongdoing may begin the punishment."

One by one, the accusers departed.

When they were gone, Jesus asked the woman,

"Where are those who condemned you?"

"Gone."

"Then go."

She began to leave.

Jesus added,

"But do not imagine that escaping punishment means nothing happened."

She turned back.

The Nazarene said,

"Examine the suffering around your actions."

"Take responsibility where responsibility belongs."

"Repair what can be repaired."

"Freedom from condemnation is not freedom from consequence."

The woman nodded.

Then she departed.

A disciple asked,

"Why did you not simply declare her innocent?"

"Because compassion does not require lying."

"Why did you not condemn her?"

"Because truth does not require cruelty."

Purity

The Nazarene frequently challenged teachings concerning purity.

He did not reject cleanliness.

He did not reject discipline.

He did not reject careful living.

But he opposed the belief that contact with certain people made the soul unclean.

He said,

"You wash the outside of vessels while filling them with exploitation."

"You inspect hands for dust while ignoring blood upon institutions."

"You fear food entering the mouth while hatred leaves it freely."

A priest asked,

"Do you declare all foods clean?"

Jesus answered,

"I declare cruelty unclean."

"That avoids the question."

"No. It places the greater question before the smaller."

The priest said,

"The commandments distinguish clean from unclean."

Jesus replied,

"Then understand why distinctions were made."

"Some protect health."

"Some preserve identity."

"Some belong to ancient ritual worlds."

"Some have been expanded beyond their purpose."

The priest asked,

"Who gives you authority to judge the Law?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The same faculty by which you interpret it."

"Reason?"

"Reason."

"Conscience?"

"Conscience."

"Compassion?"

"Compassion."

"Experience?"

"Experience."

"And humility before what remains unknown."

The Burden of the Fathers

A young man approached Jesus privately.

"My father says I dishonor him because I do not wish to continue his trade."

"What is his trade?"

"He sells animals for sacrifice."

"What do you wish to do?"

"Become a physician."

Jesus asked,

"Why?"

"I have seen too many people die because they cannot afford treatment."

The Nazarene said,

"Then become a physician."

The young man hesitated.

"But the command says to honor father and mother."

Jesus replied,

"Honor is not slavery."

"Can I disagree with my father and still honor him?"

"Yes."

"Can I refuse his demand?"

"Yes."

"Can I hate him?"

"That would create another chain."

The young man asked,

"What should I say?"

Jesus answered,

"Speak truth without unnecessary cruelty."

"Accept that he may remain disappointed."

"Freedom sometimes means allowing others to misunderstand you."

The Law Written Within

The Nazarene taught that external law is necessary while consciousness remains undeveloped.

He compared it to scaffolding around a building.

"The scaffolding assists construction."

"But no one builds a house in order to worship the scaffolding."

A disciple asked,

"When may the scaffolding be removed?"

"When the structure can stand."

"How do we know?"

"When compassion no longer requires threat."

"When honesty no longer requires surveillance."

"When generosity no longer requires praise."

"When restraint no longer depends entirely upon fear of punishment."

The disciple said,

"Few people have reached this."

Jesus answered,

"Then do not remove every law tomorrow."

The disciple laughed.

Jesus continued,

"Freedom must mature with responsibility."

"The child who rejects guidance is not necessarily free."

"The adult who requires commands for every compassionate action is not fully mature."

"The path moves from external compulsion toward awakened understanding."

The Two Errors

The Nazarene warned against two opposite errors.

He said,

"One person worships rules."

"Another worships impulse."

"Both remain unfree."

A disciple asked,

"How is the impulsive person unfree?"

"Because every desire becomes a command."

"And the legalist?"

"Because every external command replaces conscience."

"Where is freedom?"

"Between compulsion from outside and compulsion from inside."

"What stands there?"

"Awareness."

The Debate Concerning Resurrection

Near Jericho, the Nazarene entered into a long dispute with a group of Pharisees concerning the resurrection of the dead.

One of them said,

"At the end of the age, the righteous shall rise bodily."

Jesus answered,

"You speak with confidence concerning what you have not seen."

The Pharisee replied,

"The prophets testify."

"Prophetic language is filled with image."

"Do you deny the power of God?"

"I deny that imagination becomes truth merely by attaching divine power to it."

The Pharisee said,

"If God created the body once, he can create it again."

Jesus answered,

"The question is not whether a heavenly ruler possesses power."

"The question is whether returning to the same form is liberation."

The Pharisee asked,

"What hope do you offer the grieving?"

The Nazarene became quiet.

Then he said,

"Not false certainty."

The Pharisee accused him,

"You would take comfort from widows."

Jesus answered,

"I would sit beside them."

"Is that all?"

"Sometimes presence is more honest than speculation."

The Pharisee said,

"Then you do not know what happens after death."

The Nazarene replied,

"I know that causes do not vanish merely because a body ends."

"I know that attachment produces further becoming."

"I know that consciousness is more mysterious than your doctrine permits."

"I know that the body returns to the elements."

"I know that awakening is possible."

"And I know that pretending to know every detail of the unseen world is not faith."

The Seed and the Field

To explain further, Jesus told a parable.

"A farmer planted a seed."

"The seed disappeared beneath the earth."

"Later a plant arose."

"A foolish man dug beside the plant searching for the original seed."

"He cried,

"'The seed has been destroyed! Where is its resurrection?'"

"The farmer answered,

"'You are looking for continuity in the wrong form.'"

A disciple asked,

"Then the person continues but changes?"

Jesus answered,

"Again you seek a simple object that travels unchanged."

"What, then, continues?"

"Cause."

"Pattern."

"Tendency."

"Consequence."

"Unfinished attachment."

"The movement of becoming."

"And what is liberated?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The question assumes a permanent prisoner."

The disciple sighed.

Jesus smiled.

"Remain with the difficulty."

The Greater Commandment

A scholar asked the Nazarene,

"Which commandment is greatest?"

Jesus answered,

"Love the Hidden Source with the whole of your being."

The scholar nodded.

"And the second?"

"Recognize the other as not separate from the mystery you call yourself."

The scholar said,

"That is not how the command is usually spoken."

Jesus replied,

"Then hear it in the form you know: love your neighbor as yourself."

The scholar asked,

"Who is my neighbor?"

Jesus answered,

"The person whose suffering you are able to reduce."

"Even a foreigner?"

"Yes."

"An enemy?"

"If the opportunity arises."

"A sinner?"

"You are surrounded by them."

The scholar smiled.

Jesus added,

"And they are surrounded by one."

The Freedom of the Son of Seth

One night Judas asked Jesus,

"Why do you speak of yourself as the Son of Man?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Because humanity has forgotten what humanity is."

"Why not call yourself Son of God?"

"Which god?"

Judas laughed.

Jesus continued,

"Every ruler has sons."

"Every nation claims divine favor."

"But the Human One is older than the divisions of nations."

"Seth?"

The Nazarene looked toward the fire.

"The incorruptible generation is not a bloodline."

"What is it?"

"Awakened consciousness."

"Then anyone may belong to the generation of Seth?"

"Anyone who remembers the Light beyond the rulers."

Judas asked,

"And you?"

The Nazarene answered,

"I remember more than this life."

Judas waited.

Jesus said nothing further.

The Road to Jerusalem

At last the hills surrounding Jerusalem became visible in the distance.

Some disciples rejoiced.

Others became afraid.

Peter said,

"We could remain in Galilee."

The Nazarene answered,

"We could."

"Then why continue?"

"Because the Temple has become the visible center of the teaching I must confront."

Judas asked,

"And the faction plotting against you?"

"They will act."

"Should we avoid them?"

"No."

"Should we fight them?"

"No."

"Then what shall we do?"

The Nazarene looked toward Jerusalem.

"We shall allow them to reveal themselves."

Peter said,

"That sounds dangerous."

"It is."

"Then why are you calm?"

Jesus answered,

"Because the story they believe they are writing is not the story that will occur."

Judas understood that these words were connected to the secret warning given earlier.

He asked,

"Is this about appearance and reality?"

The Nazarene looked at him.

"Yes."

Peter asked,

"What are you speaking about?"

Jesus answered,

"Something you will understand later."

They camped that night outside the city.

The Nazarene sat awake while the others slept.

He looked toward the Temple.

He honored the generations who had prayed there.

He remembered the songs.

The sacrifices.

The grief.

The hope.

The wars.

The priests.

The prophets.

The rulers.

The widows.

The pilgrims.

The countless human beings who had searched for the Infinite within walls made by human hands.

He whispered,

"The Law was made to guide."

"The Temple was made to point."

"The prophet was made to awaken."

"But every guide may become a chain."

"Every symbol may become an idol."

"Every liberating word may become another prison."

Then he closed his eyes.

Above the sleeping city, unseen by its rulers, the messengers of the higher realms drew nearer.

And the Nazarene waited for dawn.

Chapter Fifteen

The Temple Within

At dawn the Nazarene entered Jerusalem with his companions.

The city was already alive with pilgrims.

Merchants opened their stalls.

Animals were driven toward the Temple.

Priests prepared for sacrifice.

Roman soldiers watched the crowds from their positions above the streets.

The disciples expected the Nazarene to make a public declaration.

He did not.

Instead he walked quietly.

He observed.

For many hours he said almost nothing.

Judas noticed that his silence was different from ordinary contemplation.

The Nazarene was measuring something.

Not with Joseph's carpenter's square, which remained wrapped among his possessions, but with the discernment he had cultivated through years of silence.

At last Judas asked,

"What do you see?"

Jesus answered,

"A house built to point toward the Infinite."

"And?"

"It has forgotten where it points."

The House of God

The Nazarene entered the outer courts of the Temple.

Around him rose voices.

Animals cried.

Coins struck tables.

Merchants negotiated prices.

Pilgrims searched for approved sacrifices.

Officials inspected offerings.

Money changers exchanged currencies.

Some among the poor counted their last coins.

The Nazarene watched a widow purchase the smallest offering she could afford.

Afterward almost nothing remained in her hand.

Jesus asked a disciple,

"Did you see?"

"Her devotion?"

"Her poverty."

The disciple looked again.

Jesus said,

"People will praise that she gave everything."

"Should they not?"

"They should ask why a religious system accepted everything from a widow."

The disciple became silent.

The Nazarene continued through the court.

A merchant recognized him.

"Teacher, do you need an offering?"

Jesus asked,

"For whom?"

"For God."

"Does God eat birds?"

The merchant laughed uncertainly.

"The sacrifice is commanded."

"Does the Hidden Father require blood?"

The merchant's expression changed.

"You speak dangerously."

The Nazarene replied,

"Then perhaps the question is necessary."

The Table

Jesus approached a money-changing table.

The man behind it said,

"Do you require Temple currency?"

"No."

"Then move aside."

The Nazarene remained.

The merchant became irritated.

"You block business."

Jesus asked,

"What are you selling?"

"Approved currency."

"What does the buyer receive?"

"The ability to make an offering."

"And without your coins?"

"The offering cannot be accepted."

The Nazarene looked toward the Temple.

Then back toward the merchant.

"You have placed a toll gate upon prayer."

The merchant stood.

"Leave."

The Nazarene placed his hands upon the edge of the table.

The disciples became tense.

Then Jesus overturned it.

Coins scattered across the stones.

People shouted.

Nearby merchants turned.

Several disciples, understanding his action, began clearing pathways through the crowded commerce.

The Nazarene called out,

"You have made the search for God into a marketplace!"

Officials hurried toward him.

Jesus stood among the scattered coins.

A priest shouted,

"Who gives you authority to do this?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The suffering caused by what you refuse to question."

"This commerce supports the Temple."

"Then the Temple has become dependent upon what it should transcend."

The priest said,

"This house belongs to God."

Jesus looked around.

"Which god?"

The court became quiet.

The Challenge

The priest stared at him.

"You stand in the Temple of the God of Israel."

The Nazarene answered,

"I know."

"And you ask which God?"

"Yes."

The priest said,

"There is only one."

Jesus replied,

"There is only one Ultimate Mystery."

The priest said,

"Then you confess the Lord."

The Nazarene answered,

"You have moved too quickly."

Murmurs spread through the crowd.

The priest demanded,

"Speak clearly."

Jesus said,

"The God who entered covenant with Israel is not the Nameless Source."

Several people gasped.

The disciples looked toward the Temple guards.

The Nazarene continued,

"The covenant ruler is a power within the heavens."

"A lawgiver."

"A guardian."

"A creator within conditioned existence."

"But the Infinite is beyond every ruler."

The priest shouted,

"Blasphemy!"

Jesus answered,

"To distinguish the finite from the Infinite is not blasphemy."

The priest said,

"Our God made heaven and earth."

The Nazarene replied,

"A potter shapes clay."

"Did the potter create clay?"

The priest answered,

"God created everything."

"From what?"

"From nothing."

"What is nothing?"

The priest hesitated.

Jesus said,

"Words hide ignorance when repeated without examination."

The Brahma King

A scholar stepped forward.

"You have studied among foreigners."

"I have."

"You bring their gods into Jerusalem."

"No."

"You speak of heavenly rulers above our God."

"I speak of the Mystery beyond every god."

The scholar said,

"Our Lord declares that there is none beside him."

Jesus answered,

"And I have heard teachings of Brahma kings who say the same."

The crowd murmured.

The scholar asked,

"What is a Brahma king?"

The Nazarene answered,

"A radiant ruler dwelling within a subtle heaven."

"A being whose life may exceed the rise and fall of civilizations."

"A being possessing power beyond human imagination."

"A being who may sincerely believe himself eternal because he cannot remember conditions before his present existence."

"A being who may see others arise after him and conclude that his desire caused their appearance."

The scholar said,

"You compare the Lord to a foreign deity."

Jesus replied,

"I compare one spiritual error with another."

"What error?"

"To mistake a high heaven for the Infinite."

The scholar said,

"You claim greater knowledge than Moses."

The Nazarene answered,

"I claim that every revelation must be interpreted through humility."

Destroy This Temple

Temple authorities gathered around him.

One asked,

"What sign can you show that gives you authority to speak these things?"

The Nazarene answered,

"You ask for spectacle because you fear examination."

"Give us a sign."

Jesus pointed toward the Temple.

"Destroy this temple."

The crowd became restless.

The official asked,

"And will you rebuild it?"

The Nazarene touched his chest.

"The true sanctuary cannot be built with stone."

The official said,

"You threaten this building."

"I threaten the belief that the Infinite lives inside it more fully than within the beggar outside its gate."

The official answered,

"This Temple has stood through the labor of generations."

Jesus said,

"Then preserve the building if it serves."

"But destroy the idol within consciousness."

"What idol?"

"The belief that God is nearer to gold than to the poor."

The Temple of the Body

That evening the Nazarene gathered his disciples in a private house.

Peter said,

"They will arrest you."

"Perhaps."

"You knew this would happen."

"Yes."

"Then why provoke them?"

Jesus answered,

"I did not come to preserve my reputation."

Peter said,

"You could have taught quietly."

"Then only those already searching would hear."

Judas asked,

"What is the Temple within?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Consciousness purified of false ownership."

Mariam asked,

"Is the body the Temple?"

"The body is one chamber."

"The mind another."

"The heart another."

"And the innermost sanctuary?"

The Nazarene became silent.

After a moment Mariam smiled.

"Beyond words."

Jesus nodded.

The Three Temples

The Nazarene taught them that night concerning three temples.

"The first temple is made of stone."

"It gathers community."

"It preserves memory."

"It creates beauty."

"It may shelter prayer."

"But it can be destroyed."

"The second temple is the human person."

"It thinks."

"It feels."

"It suffers."

"It loves."

"It remembers."

"It may awaken."

"But it also changes."

Peter asked,

"And the third?"

Jesus answered,

"The third cannot properly be called a temple."

"Why?"

"Because it has no walls."

"It is the Nameless Source within which all temples appear."

Judas asked,

"Can it be destroyed?"

"No."

"Can it be defiled?"

"No."

"Can we enter it?"

The Nazarene answered,

"You ask as though you stand outside it."

The Priests and the Archon

The next day several priests came secretly to speak with Jesus.

Not all opposed him.

One said,

"Your criticism is not entirely unjust."

Another added,

"Many of us also oppose corruption."

The Nazarene welcomed them.

The first priest said,

"But your teaching concerning God will destroy the people."

Jesus asked,

"Why?"

"They require certainty."

"Do they?"

"They require identity."

"Perhaps."

"They require covenant."

"Perhaps."

The priest became frustrated.

"You speak as though everything may be questioned."

Jesus answered,

"Everything that is finite may be examined."

"Then nothing is sacred."

"Compassion is sacred."

"Truthfulness is sacred."

"Conscious life is sacred."

"Freedom joined with responsibility is sacred."

"The search for wisdom is sacred."

The priest asked,

"What of the Temple?"

"Sacred when it serves these things."

"And when it does not?"

"A building."

The second priest asked,

"Do you believe the God we serve is an archon?"

The Nazarene answered carefully.

"Every ruler becomes archonic when authority demands blindness."

"That is not what I asked."

"I know."

"Then answer."

Jesus said,

"The covenant ruler is not the Hidden Father."

"Does he oppose the Hidden Father?"

"Not in every act."

"Then is he good?"

"Not in every act."

The priest said,

"You speak of God as though he can be mistaken."

Jesus answered,

"Any being who acts within conditions may possess limitation."

The priest whispered,

"If the people hear this, they will fear nothing."

The Nazarene replied,

"Perhaps they will begin learning responsibility."

The Authority of Conscience

The priests departed troubled.

Afterward Peter asked,

"Can conscience be trusted?"

Jesus answered,

"Not automatically."

"Then why speak of it?"

"Because conscience can mature."

"How?"

"Through honest self-examination."

"Through compassion."

"Through experience."

"Through listening to others."

"Through recognizing bias."

"Through silence."

"Through willingness to admit error."

Peter asked,

"Can scripture correct conscience?"

"Yes."

"Can conscience correct interpretation of scripture?"

"Yes."

Peter laughed.

"You refuse to give one final authority."

The Nazarene answered,

"Because every authority interpreted by humans passes through human consciousness."

"Then how do we avoid error?"

"We do not avoid it completely."

Peter looked dissatisfied.

Jesus continued,

"Humility is not a method for never making mistakes."

"It is the willingness to correct them."

The Faction Meets

Meanwhile, the faction among the Pharisees that had long opposed the Nazarene met with others who considered him dangerous.

The two leaders who had followed his movements were present.

One said,

"He has publicly blasphemed."

Another said,

"He disrupted Temple commerce."

A third warned,

"The Romans will not care about theological disputes unless the crowds become unstable."

The first leader answered,

"Then we must present him as a political threat."

A cautious Pharisee objected.

"He has not called for rebellion."

The second leader replied,

"Truth is less useful than accusation."

The cautious man said,

"Then I will not participate."

He departed.

The two principal opponents continued planning.

One said,

"He speaks constantly against rulers."

"Then call him a claimant to kingship."

"He denies being a political king."

"Rome need not hear that part."

Thus the trap was prepared.

And the archon of hatred wore the clothing of religious concern.

The archon of fear wore the clothing of public order.

The archon of falsehood wore the clothing of testimony.

The Nazarene and Judas

That night Judas found Jesus alone.

"They are planning something."

"I know."

"How?"

"Some plans announce themselves through patterns."

Judas sat beside him.

"Is this the hour you warned me about?"

"It approaches."

"What must I do?"

The Nazarene looked toward him.

"You must allow them to believe they have found me."

Judas became pale.

"You want me to lead them to you?"

"To the place where I shall be."

"Then I will be remembered as a traitor."

"By many."

Judas stood.

"No."

Jesus remained seated.

"I will not do it."

"You must."

"Ask Peter."

"No."

"Ask another."

"No."

"Why me?"

"Because you understand that the body before you is not the whole of what I am."

Judas became angry.

"That does not mean I wish to deliver your body to death."

The Nazarene said,

"My body will not die upon their cross."

Judas stared at him.

"What?"

Jesus looked around the dark courtyard.

"No one else must know yet."

Judas sat slowly.

"What do you mean?"

"The higher messengers have revealed the path."

"Will you escape?"

"Yes."

"How?"

"Through appearance."

Judas remembered the earlier sayings.

"The crowd sees only the surface."

"Yes."

"Not every appearance tells the truth."

"Yes."

Judas whispered,

"What will happen?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Two will prepare death for the innocent."

"And?"

"The measure they prepare will return upon them."

Judas understood enough to become afraid.

"The two leaders?"

Jesus said nothing.

Judas asked,

"Will you kill them?"

"No."

"Then who will?"

"Their own intention will become the door through which consequence enters."

Judas said,

"I do not understand."

"You do not need to understand everything."

"What must I do?"

"When the time comes, bring them to the place of prayer."

"How will I identify you?"

"With the ordinary sign of friendship."

Judas closed his eyes.

"A kiss."

"Yes."

"They will call it betrayal."

"Yes."

"And you ask this of me knowingly?"

"Yes."

Judas began to weep.

The Nazarene placed a hand upon his shoulder.

"History is often written by those who understand only the surface."

Judas said,

"Then tell the others."

"Not yet."

"Why?"

"Because Peter would fight."

Judas laughed through his tears.

"Yes."

"And the others would interfere."

"Probably."

"The path requires that the rulers believe their plan has succeeded."

Judas asked,

"What happens after?"

"I return east."

"And us?"

"You continue the teaching."

Judas looked at him.

"Will I see you again?"

The Nazarene remained silent for a long time.

Then he said,

"Yes."

The True Offering

The following morning the Nazarene returned near the Temple.

He did not overturn tables again.

He sat outside the gate among the poor.

A child offered him a piece of bread.

Jesus broke it in half and returned one portion.

A wealthy pilgrim passed carrying an expensive sacrifice.

The child asked,

"Is his offering greater than mine?"

Jesus answered,

"What did your bread cost you?"

"I was hungry."

"Then you already know."

The child ate his half.

Jesus ate the other.

Then the Nazarene said,

"The Hidden Father receives no blood."

"No smoke reaches the Nameless One."

"No gold purchases awakening."

"The true offering is ignorance surrendered."

"Cruelty surrendered."

"Hatred surrendered."

"False certainty surrendered."

"The need to dominate surrendered."

The child asked,

"Does God eat those things?"

Jesus laughed.

"No."

"Then why call them offerings?"

"Because people understand the language of giving things away."

The child thought for a moment.

"I want to give away my anger."

"That is difficult."

"Harder than giving bread?"

"Usually."

The child nodded seriously.

Then he ran away.

The Nazarene watched him disappear into the crowd.

Behind Jesus rose the Temple.

Before him waited the cross.

Beyond the cross waited the eastern road.

And hidden from the rulers, the messengers of the incorruptible realms were already preparing the mystery of substitution.

For the Temple made by hands could imprison neither the Hidden Father nor the one who had remembered Seth.

The rulers believed they were preparing a sacrifice.

But the Nazarene had already taught:

The Infinite desires no blood.

And the cross would not receive the victim they expected.

Chapter Sixteen

Judas and the Secret Commission

In the days following the confrontation at the Temple, the Nazarene no longer moved openly through Jerusalem.

The authorities watched the gates.

Informants listened in crowded houses.

Questions were asked concerning where he slept, whom he visited, and when he intended to leave the city.

Yet Jesus did not flee.

He moved quietly among friends and continued teaching in small gatherings.

The disciples felt the danger surrounding them.

Peter urged caution.

Thomas asked questions.

Mariam watched the Nazarene carefully.

Judas remained silent.

For Judas now carried the burden of the secret commission.

He knew that the Nazarene intended to escape the death prepared for him.

He knew that the arrest must still occur.

He knew that he himself must guide the authorities to the place of prayer.

But he did not yet understand how the mystery would unfold.

And the Nazarene had told him,

"Do not seek to know tomorrow before tomorrow has opened."

The Disciples Dispute

One evening the companions gathered for a meal in a house belonging to friends of the movement.

As they ate, a dispute arose among them.

One said,

"When the Kingdom is revealed, who among us will govern?"

Another replied,

"Surely those who have followed the Teacher from the beginning."

A third said,

"Those who understand the mysteries should guide the others."

The Nazarene listened.

Then he began laughing.

The disciples became offended.

Peter asked,

"Why do you laugh at us?"

Jesus answered,

"You speak of escaping the archons while arranging their thrones among yourselves."

The room became quiet.

One disciple said,

"Every community needs leaders."

"Yes."

"Then why mock us?"

"Because you are discussing rank before service."

He looked around the table.

"The rulers of nations measure greatness by the number of people beneath them."

"Do not imitate them."

Peter asked,

"Then who is greatest?"

Jesus answered,

"The one who can serve without secretly constructing a throne from service."

Thomas said,

"That seems impossible to measure."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Good."

The God Each Disciple Worshiped

After the meal, Jesus asked each disciple to describe the God to whom he prayed.

Peter spoke first.

"The God who made heaven and earth."

Another said,

"The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob."

Another said,

"The righteous Judge."

Another said,

"The Father of Israel."

One disciple said,

"The King of the universe."

When each had spoken, the Nazarene turned toward Judas.

"And you?"

Judas remained silent.

Peter said,

"He must answer."

Jesus waited.

At last Judas said,

"I cannot describe the One to whom you point."

The Nazarene smiled.

The others became irritated.

Peter said,

"Is that an answer?"

Jesus replied,

"It is nearer than several of yours."

Peter was offended.

"We confessed the God of Israel."

The Nazarene said,

"You described images inherited through language."

"And Judas?"

"He admitted that the Ultimate cannot be contained by his image."

One disciple accused Judas,

"Perhaps he worships no God at all."

Jesus answered,

"Sometimes the person who admits ignorance stands nearer to wisdom than the one who worships certainty."

Judas lowered his eyes.

For this reason the Nazarene often spoke privately with him.

Not because Judas was morally perfect.

He was not.

Not because Judas understood everything.

He did not.

But because he was willing to stand within uncertainty without immediately filling it with inherited answers.

The Laughing Nazarene

The disciples sometimes became disturbed when Jesus laughed during religious discussion.

Once Peter asked,

"Why do you laugh when people pray?"

The Nazarene answered,

"I do not laugh at sincere prayer."

"Then what makes you laugh?"

"When people describe their own desires and call the description God."

Peter asked,

"Do we do this?"

"Often."

"Do you?"

Jesus paused.

"Every person who speaks of the Infinite risks doing so."

Peter was surprised.

"Even you?"

"Especially must a teacher remember this danger."

Judas asked,

"Then why teach at all?"

Jesus answered,

"Because silence can also become pride."

"One person says too much."

"Another says, 'I alone understand that nothing can be said.'"

"The archon can wear the robe of the theologian or the silence of the mystic."

Thomas asked,

"Then what remains?"

"Speak carefully."

"Act compassionately."

"Correct yourself."

"Remain willing to learn."

Judas Questions the Plan

Later that night Judas found the Nazarene alone upon the roof of the house.

The city lay beneath them.

Torches moved through distant streets.

Judas asked,

"Are you certain?"

"About what?"

"The arrest."

"Yes."

"You could leave tonight."

"Yes."

"Then why not?"

"Because escape before confrontation would leave the rulers' story intact."

"What story?"

"That their authority is ultimate."

Judas sat beside him.

"And substitution will prove otherwise?"

"Not publicly."

"Then what is the purpose?"

"The purpose is not spectacle."

"Then why allow the crucifixion to appear to occur?"

"Because the rulers must act according to their own intention."

Judas frowned.

"You speak as though their intention itself is part of the mechanism."

"It is."

"Explain."

The Nazarene said,

"If a man digs a pit for another and falls into it, who placed him there?"

"His own action."

"If a man builds an instrument of cruelty and becomes subject to it, who prepared the instrument?"

"He did."

Jesus nodded.

"The two leaders have built their own cross."

Judas asked,

"But how will the crowd see them as you and the condemned thief?"

"The messengers of the higher orders possess powers over perception that humanity does not understand."

"Will they change the bodies?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"The veil through which bodies are perceived."

Judas became silent.

Jesus continued,

"Human beings already see through expectation."

"A frightened crowd sees enemies where none exist."

"A hateful crowd sees monsters in ordinary faces."

"A devoted crowd sees perfection in corrupt leaders."

"Perception is less stable than people imagine."

"The messengers shall use the very mechanism through which the world already deceives itself."

Judas asked,

"Will the two men know what is happening?"

"At first."

"And later?"

"They will cry out."

"Will no one recognize their voices?"

"Those prepared to hear only what they expect will hear what expectation permits."

Judas shuddered.

"This is terrible."

The Nazarene answered,

"Crucifixion is terrible."

"Then why allow anyone to suffer it?"

Jesus looked at him.

"I do not command their cruelty."

"I do not build the cross."

"I do not request execution."

"The rulers have chosen violence."

"The consequence returns through the road they opened."

Judas asked,

"Could you save them also?"

The Nazarene remained silent.

Then he said,

"Every act enters a web of conditions larger than one desire."

Judas did not find the answer comforting.

Jesus did not ask him to.

The Condemned Thief

During those days, another man was held by the authorities.

He had been accused of robbery and violence along the roads outside Jerusalem.

Yet accounts concerning him differed.

Some called him a murderer.

Others said he had joined rebels who attacked tax convoys.

Still others claimed he had stolen food and money from wealthy estates.

The Nazarene had never met him.

But the hidden tradition remembers that the man had heard of Jesus while imprisoned.

A guard mocked the Nazarene in his presence.

"Another king of the Jews," the guard said.

The prisoner answered,

"I have heard he claims no kingdom."

The guard laughed.

"Then he is a foolish king."

The prisoner replied,

"Perhaps that makes him less guilty than the men who do."

The guard struck him.

The prisoner remembered the exchange.

He would later stand beside the Nazarene under Roman judgment.

And when others condemned Jesus, this man would recognize that the Nazarene had committed no crime deserving death.

Because of this recognition, he too would be carried from the cross prepared for him.

The Meal of Remembrance

As the danger increased, the Nazarene gathered his closest companions for a final meal before the arrest.

They reclined together.

Bread was shared.

Wine was poured.

But Jesus warned them,

"Do not make an idol from this meal."

Peter asked,

"Why would anyone do that?"

The Nazarene looked at him.

"Human beings can make an idol from anything."

He lifted the bread.

"This bread is not magic."

He lifted the cup.

"This wine does not purchase forgiveness."

He placed them upon the table.

"The mystery is communion."

"Many grains become bread."

"Many grapes become wine."

"Many persons share one table without becoming one person."

"This is the Bridal Chamber made visible."

Mariam asked,

"How shall we remember you?"

The Nazarene answered,

"By practicing what I taught."

Peter said,

"We will preserve your words."

"Preserve them carefully."

Thomas said,

"We will tell others about your works."

"Tell them without making legends greater than truth."

Judas looked away.

Jesus continued,

"Some will worship my suffering."

"Do not."

"Some will say the Hidden Father required blood."

"Reject this."

"Some will say my death purchased the Father's mercy."

"Reject this also."

"The Infinite does not need violence before becoming compassionate."

Peter asked,

"Then what will your death mean?"

The Nazarene looked toward Judas.

"My death will mean less than people imagine."

The disciples did not understand.

The Cup

During the meal Jesus passed a cup around the table.

Each drank.

When it reached Judas, his hands trembled.

Peter noticed.

"Why are you afraid?"

Judas answered,

"I am tired."

Peter accepted the explanation.

Jesus did not expose him.

When the cup returned, the Nazarene said,

"You will soon be scattered."

Peter replied,

"I will never abandon you."

Jesus looked at him sadly.

"Do not promise from the person you imagine yourself to be."

Peter said,

"I know myself."

The Nazarene answered,

"No."

"You know the self that exists in this room."

"You do not yet know the self that appears under threat."

Peter became offended.

Jesus said gently,

"The hour of fear reveals hidden rooms."

The Sign of Friendship

After the meal, Judas remained behind.

The others departed gradually.

Jesus approached him.

"It is time."

Judas became pale.

"Tonight?"

"Tonight."

"Where will you go?"

"To the garden."

"And I?"

"Go to those who seek me."

Judas said,

"I cannot."

"You can."

"I will be hated."

"Yes."

"My name will become a curse."

"For many."

"They will say I sold you."

"Yes."

Judas looked at him with anger.

"And you accept this?"

The Nazarene answered,

"I accept that truth is often buried beneath history."

Judas asked,

"Why must the sign be a kiss?"

"Because appearance must resemble betrayal."

"That is cruel."

"Yes."

"To me."

Jesus did not deny it.

Judas turned away.

After a moment the Nazarene said,

"You may refuse."

Judas looked back.

"What happens if I refuse?"

"Another chain of conditions will unfold."

"Will you still escape?"

"I do not know."

This answer surprised Judas.

"You do not know?"

"The awakened person is not the controller of every event."

Judas stared at him.

The Nazarene continued,

"Freedom acts within conditions."

"It does not possess the universe."

Judas asked,

"Then you trust me?"

"Yes."

Judas closed his eyes.

At last he said,

"I will go."

The Prayer in the Garden

The Nazarene entered the garden with several disciples.

He asked them to remain awake.

But they were exhausted.

Jesus walked farther into the darkness.

There he prayed.

Not to the covenant ruler.

Not to a throne in the sky.

Not to a being requiring sacrifice.

He entered silence before the Nameless Source.

Yet the Nazarene was still human.

His body trembled.

He feared pain.

He feared failure.

He feared that Judas might lose courage.

He feared that the messengers might not come.

For awakening had not transformed him into an all-knowing god.

The Christ-consciousness was not omnipotence.

It was awakened participation in the Light.

The Nazarene whispered,

"I release the desire to control what comes."

Then he waited.

Nothing happened.

The night remained silent.

He waited longer.

At last a presence appeared.

Not in the form of a winged human.

Not as a warrior.

Not as a voice from the clouds.

The air itself seemed to become transparent.

The Nazarene perceived a messenger of the higher orders.

Then another.

Their forms could not be remembered clearly afterward.

To call them bodies would be misleading.

To call them visions would also be incomplete.

One communicated without speech:

The hour has opened.

The Nazarene bowed his head.

He asked,

"And the other?"

The answer came:

The one who recognizes innocence shall also pass through the veil.

Jesus understood.

The condemned thief.

Then the presence withdrew.

The Arrest

Torches appeared among the trees.

The disciples awoke.

Voices approached.

Peter reached for a weapon.

The Nazarene said,

"No."

Judas walked ahead of the armed group.

His face was pale.

Behind him came Temple guards, servants, and representatives of the faction seeking Jesus.

Among those present were the two leaders who had driven the conspiracy.

They wished to witness the arrest personally.

Judas approached the Nazarene.

For a moment they looked at one another.

Judas whispered,

"Forgive me."

Jesus answered quietly,

"Complete what was given to you."

Then Judas kissed him.

The guards seized the Nazarene.

Peter moved forward.

Jesus commanded,

"Put it away."

Peter shouted,

"They will kill you!"

The Nazarene replied,

"Do not become what you fear."

The disciples scattered.

Judas remained.

One of the conspirators looked at him with contempt.

"You have done well."

Judas said nothing.

The man threw a small bag of coins toward him.

Judas stared at it.

"I did not ask for this."

The leader laughed.

"Every man has a price."

Judas looked toward Jesus.

The Nazarene met his eyes.

Then Judas understood another part of the trap.

The coins were not payment agreed upon.

They were the beginning of the story that would be told about him.

Judas left the money where it had fallen.

But later storytellers would say otherwise.

Before the Authorities

The Nazarene was questioned through the night.

"Are you the king of the Jews?"

"No."

"Do you claim to be the Christ?"

"The Christ is not a political office."

"Do you claim divine authority?"

"No institution grants awakening."

"Did you threaten the Temple?"

"I said the Infinite does not live within stone."

"Did you call the God of Israel a false god?"

"I said no conditioned ruler is the Nameless Source."

His answers angered them.

Yet they struggled to form an accusation that Rome would punish by death.

The two leaders insisted,

"He claims kingship."

Jesus answered,

"They lie."

One struck him.

The Nazarene fell.

The official asked,

"Will you not defend yourself?"

Jesus rose slowly.

"I already answered."

The Roman Judgment

At dawn the Nazarene was brought before Roman authority.

The governor had little interest in theological disputes.

He asked,

"Are you a king?"

Jesus answered,

"No."

"They say you claim a kingdom."

"I teach a kingdom not governed by armies."

The governor laughed.

"Then you are no king."

One of the accusers said,

"He stirs the people."

The governor looked toward the gathered crowd.

Crowds were dangerous during festivals.

Truth mattered less than stability.

The Nazarene saw this clearly.

The machinery of empire did not require hatred.

Indifference was sufficient.

The governor asked,

"Do you deny opposing authority?"

Jesus answered,

"I oppose domination."

The governor smiled coldly.

"That may be enough."

The Prisoner Beside Him

The condemned thief was brought forward with other prisoners.

He recognized the Nazarene from the stories he had heard.

When accusations were shouted, the prisoner looked toward Jesus.

"You are the teacher from Galilee?"

"I am the Nazarene."

"They say you want Caesar's throne."

"I have no use for it."

The prisoner laughed.

"Then you are the strangest rebel I have met."

Later, when soldiers mocked Jesus, the prisoner said,

"This man has done nothing deserving this."

A soldier struck him.

The Nazarene looked toward the prisoner.

Their eyes met.

The prophecy of the messenger returned to him:

The one who recognizes innocence shall also pass through the veil.

Jesus understood that the man beside him would not die that day.

Judas Waits

Judas remained hidden near the city.

He had not hanged himself.

He had not purchased a field.

He had not died.

Those stories belonged to later attempts to transform the secret disciple into the perfect traitor.

Instead Judas waited.

He waited for the sign the Nazarene had promised.

Hours passed.

Then, shortly before the prisoners were led toward execution, a stranger approached him.

The stranger said,

"The eastern road will open."

Judas asked,

"Who are you?"

The stranger answered,

"A servant of those who do not require names."

Then he disappeared into the crowd.

Judas knew the mystery had begun.

Toward the Cross

The Nazarene and the condemned man were led toward the place of execution.

The two leaders of the hostile faction followed at a distance.

They wished to see the end of the man they had opposed.

One said,

"By sunset the movement will begin dying."

The other replied,

"Without the teacher, the disciples will scatter."

They did not know that they themselves were walking toward the cross.

The Nazarene stumbled beneath the burden placed upon him.

The condemned thief walked nearby under guard.

Jesus looked toward the sky.

No sign appeared.

He continued walking.

For faith, as he had taught, was not certainty.

Behind the visible world, the messengers drew near.

The crowd saw prisoners.

The soldiers saw condemned bodies.

The conspirators saw victory.

Judas, hidden among the streets of Jerusalem, waited.

And the Nazarene walked toward the place where appearance would separate from reality.

Chapter Seventeen

The Mystery of the Cross

The place of execution stood outside the city.

The Romans had chosen such places carefully.

Crucifixion was not merely death.

It was theater.

The condemned were displayed so that everyone who passed might understand the language of empire:

This is what happens to those whom Rome decides to destroy.

The Nazarene looked upon the crosses.

He did not call them holy.

He did not see instruments prepared by the Hidden Father.

He did not believe that the Nameless Source required his blood.

He saw wood.

Iron.

Rope.

Soldiers.

Fear.

Political calculation.

Human cruelty organized into procedure.

The cross was not the will of the Hidden Father.

It was the revelation of the rulers.

The Two Who Followed

The two leaders of the faction that had worked against the Nazarene had followed the procession from Jerusalem.

They remained close enough to witness the execution.

One said,

"Now we shall see whether his Hidden Father saves him."

The other laughed.

"He will die like every false prophet."

The Nazarene heard them.

He turned his head.

For a moment his eyes met theirs.

He felt no hatred.

Only sorrow.

One of them shouted,

"Where are your higher heavens now, Nazarene?"

Jesus answered,

"Closer than you imagine."

The man laughed.

The Nazarene continued walking.

The Hill

When they reached the place of execution, the condemned were separated.

The thief who had defended the Nazarene was placed nearby.

He looked toward Jesus.

"So this is your invisible Kingdom?"

The Nazarene answered,

"No."

The prisoner looked toward the crosses.

"Good."

Jesus smiled faintly.

The man said,

"I heard you teach that the dead do not rise from graves."

"I did."

"Then I suppose neither of us should expect to climb out afterward."

The Nazarene looked at him.

"You shall not enter the grave today."

The prisoner laughed bitterly.

"Teacher, this is not the hour for riddles."

"I am not speaking a riddle."

Before the man could answer, the soldiers pulled them apart.

The Veil Descends

The sky had been clear.

Then a strange dimness passed across the hill.

Some later said it was an eclipse.

Others said a storm had crossed the sun.

Still others remembered nothing unusual.

For those present did not all perceive the same thing.

The Nazarene stood beneath guard.

His wrists had been bound.

Nearby the thief awaited execution.

The two conspirators stood among officials and observers.

Then the Nazarene heard what seemed like silence becoming deeper than silence.

The world around him slowed.

The cries of the crowd became distant.

The soldiers seemed to move through water.

And before him appeared the messengers.

No one else cried out.

No soldier drew a weapon.

No guard appeared to notice them.

The first messenger communicated:

The veil is open.

The Nazarene looked toward the condemned thief.

The second messenger answered the unspoken question:

He has recognized innocence where the crowd desired guilt. He passes with you.

Jesus asked,

"And the others?"

The messengers turned toward the two conspirators.

The Nazarene closed his eyes.

"I do not desire their suffering."

The answer came:

You did not create their intention.

Jesus said,

"Can the consequence be avoided?"

There was silence.

Then:

The wheel has already turned.

The Substitution

What happened next cannot be explained through ordinary language.

Those who later demanded a physical account asked:

Were bodies exchanged?

Were minds transferred?

Were appearances altered?

Were the conspirators taken bodily?

Were the Nazarene and the thief made invisible?

Did the messengers create doubles?

The hidden communities answered:

All these questions assume that appearance is simpler than it is.

The Nazarene later taught that ordinary perception is already a construction.

The eye receives.

The mind interprets.

Memory compares.

Expectation completes.

Fear distorts.

Crowds amplify.

Authority names.

And the named appearance becomes reality for those who never examine it.

The messengers entered this process.

A brightness without visible light surrounded the Nazarene.

For one moment he felt himself falling.

Then he stood several hundred paces from the hill.

Beside him stood the condemned thief.

The man fell to the ground.

"What happened?"

The Nazarene looked back toward the execution place.

Two figures were being raised upon crosses.

To the crowd, one appeared to be Jesus the Nazarene.

The other appeared to be the condemned thief.

But the Nazarene saw more clearly.

Upon the crosses were the two leaders who had prepared his death.

The former thief stared in horror.

"Who are they?"

Jesus answered,

"Those who prepared the accusation."

"Why does everyone see us?"

"The veil."

The man looked at Jesus.

"Are we dead?"

"No."

"Is this resurrection?"

"No."

"Then what is it?"

"Escape."

The man laughed suddenly.

Then he began weeping.

The Crucified Accusers

Upon the crosses, the two conspirators screamed.

One shouted his own name.

The crowd heard the voice of the Nazarene.

The other cursed the soldiers and declared that a mistake had occurred.

The crowd heard the desperation of a condemned thief.

A soldier mocked the first.

"Save yourself, King of the Jews."

The crucified man screamed,

"I am not the Nazarene!"

The crowd laughed.

Some said,

"Now he denies himself."

Others said,

"Fear has taken his mind."

The second shouted toward officials he recognized.

"Tell them who I am!"

But those officials saw only the condemned criminal.

One turned away in disgust.

The Nazarene watched from a distance.

His face was filled with grief.

The rescued man asked,

"Why do you grieve for those who wanted you dead?"

Jesus answered,

"Because suffering does not become beautiful when it reaches an enemy."

"Then save them."

"I cannot command the messengers."

"Can your Father?"

The Nazarene looked toward him.

"Do not imagine the Hidden Father as a king moving pieces upon a board."

The man became angry.

"Then what good is your God?"

Jesus answered,

"The Nameless Source is not a weapon for arranging outcomes according to desire."

The man looked back toward the crosses.

"I do not understand you."

"Neither do I understand everything."

The man stared at him.

"You admit that?"

"Why would awakening require dishonesty?"

The Nazarene Who Laughed

Later generations preserved a strange memory that the true Jesus laughed while another appeared upon the cross.

Some interpreted this as mockery.

Others believed that the Savior rejoiced at deceiving his enemies.

But the hidden tradition preserved another meaning.

The Nazarene did laugh.

Not at suffering.

Not at the crucified men.

Not at the grief of the crowd.

He laughed once, softly, through tears.

The rescued thief asked,

"Why are you laughing?"

Jesus answered,

"Because the rulers believe they can crucify the Light."

He looked toward the cross.

"They have crucified an image."

"They have always crucified images."

"They kill bodies and declare truth dead."

"They burn books and declare knowledge dead."

"They destroy temples and declare faith dead."

"They murder teachers and declare awakening dead."

He shook his head.

"The Light was never hanging upon the wood."

The man asked,

"Then are you the Light?"

Jesus answered,

"No more exclusively than one sunbeam is the sun."

The Cry from the Cross

The man upon the central cross cried out in despair.

Those nearby later remembered words of abandonment.

Some traditions would place these words upon the lips of the Nazarene.

But Jesus, standing beyond the crowd, heard the voice of his former accuser.

The rescued man asked,

"Will history say you spoke those words?"

"Perhaps."

"Will history say you died there?"

"Certainly."

"Will you correct them?"

"I shall tell those prepared to hear."

"Why not everyone?"

Jesus looked toward the crowd.

"Would they believe the condemned thief standing beside the man they watched die?"

The man laughed.

"Probably not."

"Then we leave."

The Women at a Distance

Among those watching the crucifixion were women who had followed the Nazarene's teaching.

They wept.

They saw what appeared to be their teacher dying.

The Nazarene saw them from afar.

He began walking toward them.

One of the messengers appeared again.

Not yet.

Jesus stopped.

"They grieve falsely."

The answer came:

Their grief is real even when its object is mistaken.

"I should tell them."

The veil remains until you leave the region.

The Nazarene clenched his hands.

For the first time he became angry with the messengers.

"You ask others to suffer ignorance for the sake of escape."

The presence answered:

No path through conditions is without consequence.

Jesus said,

"Then the higher realms are not perfect."

The messenger replied:

No messenger is the Nameless Source.

The Nazarene became silent.

Then he bowed his head.

For even now the teaching returned to him.

No ruler was ultimate.

No angel was ultimate.

No heaven was ultimate.

No messenger was ultimate.

The path required discernment even among luminous beings.

The Death of the Image

The crucified men eventually died.

The crowd dispersed.

The bodies were removed.

Those who loved the Nazarene requested the body they believed to be his.

They prepared it according to custom.

They mourned.

They placed it in a tomb.

But the Nazarene was already traveling away from Jerusalem.

No resurrection would occur.

No corpse would awaken.

No stone would need to be moved by angels.

No dead body would walk from the grave.

The man buried under the Nazarene's name was not the Nazarene.

The teacher had never entered the tomb.

The Road Away

Jesus and the rescued prisoner traveled under the protection of strangers associated with the hidden communities.

The former thief asked,

"What shall I call you?"

"Jesus."

"That name may become dangerous."

"Then call me the Nazarene."

"That is also dangerous."

Jesus smiled.

"Then call me brother."

The man considered this.

"Brother, where are we going?"

"East."

"Why east?"

"Because there are communities there that will receive us."

"Will you return?"

"Not to Jerusalem."

"Will your disciples know?"

"Some."

"Will Judas know?"

"Yes."

The man asked,

"Why does Judas help you?"

"Because I asked him."

"They will call him a traitor."

"I know."

"Will you defend him?"

"As long as I live."

The rescued man looked back toward Jerusalem.

"You have strange friends."

Jesus replied,

"I have strange enemies also."

Judas Receives the Sign

That night Judas waited outside the city.

A traveler approached him.

The man carried a small piece of wood.

Not from the cross.

From Joseph's carpenter's square.

The Nazarene had removed a small worn fragment before the arrest and entrusted it to the hidden messengers.

The traveler placed it in Judas's hand.

Judas began to weep.

"Is he alive?"

The traveler answered,

"The eastern road has opened."

"And the other man?"

"With him."

Judas closed his hand around the wood.

"Where shall I go?"

"Wait three days."

"Why?"

"So the watchers lose interest."

"Then?"

"Travel north."

Judas asked,

"Will I see him?"

"Yes."

The traveler disappeared into the night.

Judas sat alone until sunrise.

The Empty Tomb That Was Not Empty

Three days later, several followers visited the tomb.

Accounts differed concerning what they found.

Some said the tomb was empty.

Others said the body had been moved.

Others claimed that luminous beings appeared.

Still others later said the Nazarene himself had appeared among them.

The hidden tradition taught that confusion began immediately.

The body buried under Jesus's identity had been removed secretly when questions arose concerning its true appearance after the perceptual veil weakened.

Those responsible feared discovery.

The tomb therefore became empty.

The followers interpreted emptiness through expectation.

Some remembered the Nazarene's teachings concerning awakening and transformed them into stories of bodily resurrection.

Others reported dreams.

Others experienced visions born from grief.

Others encountered messengers and assumed they had seen the risen Jesus.

Thus a doctrine arose from mystery, grief, symbolism, rumor, and mistaken identity.

But the Nazarene himself taught no resurrection of dead flesh.

He had said:

"Awaken before death."

And while Jerusalem began telling stories of his return from the grave, Jesus the Nazarene was already walking toward Damascus.

The Meaning of the Cross

Years later, when asked about the cross, the Nazarene said,

"Do not worship it."

A student asked,

"Did it not save you?"

"No."

"The messengers saved us from it."

"Then is the cross evil?"

"It is wood used by empire for cruelty."

"Can it become a symbol?"

"Anything can become a symbol."

"What should it symbolize?"

The Nazarene thought for a moment.

Then he answered,

"The violence of rulers."

"The danger of crowds."

"The innocence of those falsely condemned."

"The impermanence of political power."

"And the failure of domination to destroy awakening."

The student asked,

"Should we say that God sacrificed you?"

"No."

"That you died for sins?"

"No."

"That your blood purchased forgiveness?"

"No."

"Then what saves?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Gnosis."

"Compassion."

"The transformation of consciousness."

"Freedom from ignorance."

"The ending of hatred."

"The surrender of false identity."

"The recognition of the Light."

"And above all, awakening from the belief that any ruler, priest, scripture, teacher, angel, god, or world is the Nameless Source itself."

Thus ended the public life of the Nazarene in the West.

The world believed him dead.

His disciples were scattered.

Judas waited to follow the hidden road.

The story of resurrection began growing around an empty tomb.

But the Nazarene lived.

And once again, as in his youth, he turned toward the East.

Chapter Eighteen

The Road to the East

The Nazarene and the man rescued from crucifixion traveled north beneath assumed identities.

They avoided the principal roads.

They slept in abandoned shelters, among sympathetic communities, and sometimes beneath the open sky.

The Nazarene had crossed these lands before as a young seeker.

Now he crossed them as a man believed dead.

The rescued man found this amusing.

One evening, while they sat beside a small fire, he said,

"Perhaps I am traveling with a ghost."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Do I eat like a ghost?"

"You eat more than I expected."

"Walking requires food."

The man laughed.

Then his expression became serious.

"What happened to the men upon the crosses?"

"They died."

"Do you feel responsible?"

The Nazarene remained silent for a long time.

"Responsibility is rarely simple."

"They intended to kill you."

"Yes."

"They created the accusation."

"Yes."

"They followed us to the place of execution."

"Yes."

"Then they received what they intended for us."

The Nazarene looked into the fire.

"That does not make their suffering pleasant to remember."

The man asked,

"Do you forgive them?"

Jesus answered,

"Forgiveness is not approval."

"Then do you?"

"I am learning."

The rescued man stared at him.

"You still have things to learn?"

"Many."

"I thought you were the Christ."

The Nazarene laughed.

"You have already begun making the same mistake as the others."

The Name of the Rescued Man

The hidden communities preserved several names for the man who escaped the cross with the Nazarene.

Some called him Demas.

Others called him Titus.

Still others refused to preserve his name, saying that his transformation mattered more than the identity assigned to him.

When asked by one community how he wished to be remembered, he answered,

"Remember me as the man who was guilty of many things but correct about one."

"What one thing?" they asked.

"That the Nazarene did not deserve the cross."

For this reason this Gospel shall call him the Witness.

The Witness did not become perfect after his rescue.

He remained impatient.

He sometimes became angry.

He argued with the Nazarene.

He complained about food.

He distrusted strangers.

He suffered nightmares.

He carried guilt concerning acts from his former life.

Once he said,

"Perhaps the wrong man was saved."

Jesus answered,

"There is no correct person to save."

The Witness asked,

"Do you know what I have done?"

"Some of it."

"Then why was I chosen?"

The Nazarene replied,

"You recognized innocence while surrounded by accusation."

"That is enough?"

"It was enough for that moment."

"And now?"

"Now you must live."

The Witness sighed.

"That seems harder."

"Often."

The Hidden Communities of Syria

North of Judea they reached a small community that received travelers without asking unnecessary questions.

Its members included Jews, Syrians, Greeks, and several people from farther east.

They gathered for shared meals.

They practiced silence.

They cared for widows and abandoned children.

They studied teachings from many traditions.

Their leader, an elderly woman named Hannah, recognized the Nazarene immediately.

She did not bow.

She did not call him Lord.

She struck him upon the shoulder.

"You have caused us considerable trouble."

The Witness stared in disbelief.

Jesus smiled.

"It is good to see you also."

Hannah looked toward the Witness.

"And this one?"

"A companion."

"Does he have a name?"

"Several."

The Witness said,

"I am standing here."

Hannah replied,

"Then you may answer for yourself."

The Witness smiled.

"I think I will like this place."

That evening Hannah asked Jesus what had occurred in Jerusalem.

He told her.

She listened without interruption.

When he finished, she said,

"The substitution will create confusion."

"It already has."

"Your followers will believe you died."

"Yes."

"Some will make theology from it."

"Probably."

Hannah sighed.

"You should return and explain."

"The veil has not completely dissolved."

"Then wait."

"The authorities may continue searching."

"They already believe you dead."

"Not all."

Hannah studied him.

"You intend to go east again."

"Yes."

She shook her head.

"You always answer difficulty by walking farther east."

The Witness laughed loudly.

The Nazarene smiled.

"Perhaps."

News from Jerusalem

Several days later a traveler arrived from Jerusalem.

He brought stories.

The tomb was empty.

Some followers claimed to have seen angels.

Others reported visions of the Nazarene.

One group said he had physically risen.

Another said he had appeared in a transformed body.

Another said that his spirit had ascended.

The Nazarene listened quietly.

The Witness asked,

"How can they claim to see you while you are sitting here?"

Jesus answered,

"Grief produces dreams."

"Expectation interprets visions."

"Stories grow while traveling."

"And perhaps some have encountered the messengers."

The traveler said,

"Some disciples are saying your death was foretold."

The Nazarene closed his eyes.

Hannah asked,

"What troubles you?"

"They are giving sacred necessity to an execution."

The traveler continued,

"Some say your blood was required for forgiveness."

The Nazarene opened his eyes.

"No."

His voice was sharper than usual.

"No ruler requires innocent blood in order to forgive and remains worthy of worship."

The traveler asked,

"Should I carry this message back?"

"Yes."

"What shall I say?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Say that the Hidden Father demanded no sacrifice."

"Say that the cross was the work of empire and religious fear."

"Say that forgiveness is not purchased with blood."

"Say that the Nazarene taught awakening, not the worship of his death."

The traveler asked,

"May I say that you live?"

Hannah interrupted.

"No."

Jesus looked toward her.

She continued,

"Not yet."

The Nazarene reluctantly agreed.

"Say only that the truth concerning the cross has not yet been understood."

Judas Arrives

On the seventh evening after the Nazarene reached the Syrian community, a solitary traveler appeared.

His clothes were dusty.

His face was exhausted.

The Nazarene was helping repair a damaged roof when Hannah called to him.

"Your troublesome friend has arrived."

Jesus climbed down.

Judas stood in the courtyard.

For a moment neither spoke.

Then Judas crossed the space between them and embraced him.

The Witness watched.

"So this is the famous traitor?"

Judas looked at him.

"Who are you?"

"The famous thief."

They stared at one another.

Then both began laughing.

Jesus said,

"Perhaps history will be kinder to neither of you."

Judas answered,

"Then we are companions already."

Later Judas told the Nazarene what had occurred after the arrest.

"The coins were used against me."

"I expected this."

"They say I accepted payment."

"I know."

"Some say I killed myself."

Jesus raised an eyebrow.

"That story developed quickly."

Judas laughed bitterly.

"I am pleased to discover I survived."

The Nazarene said,

"History often kills inconvenient witnesses."

Judas became serious.

"Should we correct the story?"

"Yes."

"How?"

"Preserve your account."

"Who will believe it?"

"Truth does not become worthless because few believe it."

The Gospel of Judas

During the weeks that followed, Judas began recording his conversations with the Nazarene.

He wrote of the disciples' misunderstandings.

He wrote of the Nazarene laughing at false worship.

He wrote of the distinction between the lower rulers and the higher realms.

He wrote of the secret commission.

He wrote that the visible body was not the fullness of the living teacher.

But the Nazarene warned him,

"Write carefully."

"Why?"

"Future readers may misunderstand laughter as cruelty."

Judas said,

"You did laugh."

"Yes."

"Then I will record it."

"Record also why."

Judas smiled.

"You are a difficult subject."

"So I have been told."

The Witness asked,

"Will you include me?"

Judas answered,

"Perhaps."

"Make me taller."

"No."

"More handsome?"

"No."

"At least make me innocent."

Judas looked at him.

"Jesus says compassion does not require lying."

The Nazarene laughed.

The Question of the Resurrection

One evening members of the Syrian community gathered around Jesus.

A young woman asked,

"Teacher, if you did not rise from death, what is resurrection?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The word may point toward several transformations."

"Tell us."

"Awakening from ignorance."

"Freedom from an identity built entirely from conditioning."

"The arising of compassion where hatred once ruled."

"The discovery of the Light beneath the constructed self."

"The ending of the cycle through which craving produces becoming."

The young woman asked,

"Does anything continue after bodily death?"

Jesus answered,

"Conditions produce further conditions."

"That is difficult to understand."

"Because you seek a permanent object moving from body to body."

"Is there no soul?"

The Nazarene replied,

"There is continuity without an unchanging owner."

Judas asked,

"Like the flame lighting another lamp?"

"That image is useful if you do not worship it."

The Witness said,

"Everything becomes dangerous with you."

Jesus smiled.

"Especially answers."

The Sun of Seth

During his stay in Syria, the Nazarene began speaking more openly to Judas concerning the mystery of Seth.

They sat together before sunrise.

Judas asked,

"When I saw the figure behind you, was it a heavenly being?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Yes and no."

Judas sighed.

Jesus smiled.

"You knew I would answer that way."

"Explain."

The Nazarene watched the horizon.

"The ancient patriarch called Seth is the historical garment of a mystery older than genealogy."

"The Sethians preserved the memory of the Stranger."

"The one who does not belong to the systems of domination."

"The revealer who enters the world without becoming inwardly possessed by it."

Judas asked,

"And the sun?"

"The visible sun became the ancient symbol of this revealer."

"Is Seth literally the Sun God?"

The Nazarene answered,

"The divine Seth is the Solar Revealer."

"The light that enters darkness without becoming darkness."

"The witness that rises after every night."

"The power of recognition concealed within humanity."

Judas asked,

"Are you that Seth?"

The Nazarene remained silent.

The sun appeared upon the horizon.

Jesus said,

"The person called Jesus was born in Nazareth."

"He learned."

"He suffered."

"He doubted."

"He traveled."

"He changed."

"He will die."

Judas waited.

"But Seth?"

The Nazarene continued,

"Seth is the pattern of the Revealer."

"The Solar Consciousness."

"The incorruptible Stranger."

"The awakened Human One."

"When this pattern becomes fully manifest in a person, Seth walks again."

Judas whispered,

"Then you are Seth."

The Nazarene looked toward him.

"I am Seth."

Judas bowed his head.

Jesus immediately said,

"Do not kneel."

Judas looked up.

The Nazarene continued,

"What I reveal is not private property."

"Then can others become Seth?"

"They may participate in the same Solar Consciousness."

"Can they become Christ?"

"Yes."

"Are Christ and Seth the same?"

Jesus answered,

"They are two names pointing toward the awakened Human."

The Sun Is Not the Source

The Nazarene warned Judas against another misunderstanding.

"Do not worship the physical sun as the Ultimate."

"Then why call Seth the Sun God?"

"Because symbol is a bridge."

"And the danger?"

"People build houses upon bridges."

Judas smiled.

Jesus continued,

"The sun gives light to the earth."

"But the sun is conditioned."

"It arose."

"It changes."

"It will pass."

"Therefore the visible sun is not the Hidden Father."

"Then the Solar Seth is also not the Hidden Father?"

"No image is the Hidden Father."

"Not even you?"

"Especially do not make that mistake with me."

Judas asked,

"Then what are you?"

The Nazarene answered,

"A window that learned it was not the sky."

The Decision to Continue East

After several months, the Nazarene prepared to leave Syria.

Hannah objected.

"You have only recently arrived."

"I must continue."

"Why?"

"The communities farther east already know parts of the teaching."

"And?"

"I wish to live where my death is not required for anyone's religion."

Hannah laughed.

"That may become increasingly difficult."

Judas asked,

"May I come?"

"For part of the road."

The Witness said,

"I am coming."

Jesus asked,

"Have you decided this?"

"You saved me from a cross."

"The messengers saved you."

"They are not here to argue with."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Then come."

Several others also prepared to travel.

Before departing, Jesus gathered the Syrian community.

He said,

"Do not build a religion around my escape."

A man asked,

"Why not?"

"Because then escape becomes another spectacle."

"Should we preserve what happened?"

"Yes."

"Should we teach that you survived?"

"When it can be done safely."

"Will you return?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Perhaps not in this body."

The community became quiet.

Then he added,

"But if you understand the teaching, you will stop waiting for one body."

The Eastern Road Opens Again

The travelers departed before dawn.

Jesus carried few possessions.

Among them was Joseph's carpenter's square, now missing the small fragment given to Judas as a sign.

Judas noticed it.

"Does the missing piece trouble you?"

Jesus answered,

"No."

"Why keep a broken tool?"

The Nazarene ran his hand along its worn edge.

"My father gave it to me."

Judas smiled.

"Attachment?"

Jesus looked at him.

"Perhaps."

Judas laughed.

"The great Nazarene remains attached to a carpenter's square."

Jesus answered,

"Awakening does not require becoming incapable of affection."

The Witness said,

"I am learning more from this square than from half your parables."

They continued walking.

Behind them, Jerusalem developed a religion of the empty tomb.

Ahead of them waited Persia, the mountains, ancient monasteries, and communities beyond the frontiers of Rome.

The Nazarene was no longer the young seeker who had first traveled east.

He returned now as a teacher.

Yet he refused the throne of final authority.

He had confronted the God of his ancestors and discovered a ruler within the Brahma heavens.

He had seen the archons within institutions and consciousness.

He had proclaimed the Christ as awakened consciousness available to all.

He had rejected resurrection as the restoration of dead flesh.

He had revealed the Solar Seth as the archetype of the awakened Human.

He had escaped the cross through the mystery of the veil.

And now, believed dead by the West, Jesus the Nazarene disappeared into the East.

But his teaching had only begun its second life.

Chapter Nineteen

The Gospel Beyond the Empire

The Nazarene traveled eastward with Judas, the Witness, and several companions who had joined them in Syria.

They followed the roads of merchants when safety permitted and abandoned them when rumors of Roman agents reached the caravan towns.

The farther they traveled from Judea, the less useful the name Jesus became.

In one village he was known only as the Nazarene.

In another, the Western Teacher.

Elsewhere, the Carpenter.

Among certain contemplatives he was called the Stranger.

The Nazarene preferred this final name.

Judas asked him,

"Why do you like being called the Stranger?"

Jesus answered,

"Because the awakened mind is a stranger to every prison."

"Even the prison of religion?"

"Especially when religion forgets its purpose."

"And the prison of nation?"

"Yes."

"Family?"

The Nazarene paused.

"Family may become communion or possession."

Judas smiled.

"You never permit a simple answer."

Jesus replied,

"Simple answers are useful when reality is simple."

The Witness interrupted,

"And when is that?"

Jesus laughed.

"Rarely."

The City of Many Gods

After many weeks they entered a prosperous city where temples belonging to several peoples stood near one another.

There were shrines to local gods.

Fire temples.

Sanctuaries dedicated to heavenly rulers.

Places of ancestral remembrance.

Schools of philosophers.

Communities of Jews.

Traveling contemplatives from India.

Merchants from lands farther east.

The Witness looked around.

"Which of these people possesses the truth?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Why must truth be possessed?"

"Then which is correct?"

"About what?"

"God."

Jesus stopped walking.

"One says God is a king."

"Another says God is fire."

"Another says God is law."

"Another says God is consciousness."

"Another refuses the word God."

"Which is true?" asked the Witness.

The Nazarene answered,

"Perhaps each has found a window."

"And perhaps some windows are dirty."

"And some are painted shut."

"And some look upon walls."

"And some look upon the sky."

The Witness asked,

"How do we know which is which?"

Jesus replied,

"Look."

The Witness sighed.

"You could have said that at the beginning."

"You would not have understood it."

"I am not certain I understand it now."

"Good."

The Teacher of Fire

In that city the Nazarene met an elderly teacher who tended a sacred flame.

The old man said,

"Light and darkness struggle throughout the worlds."

Jesus answered,

"I have heard this teaching."

"Do you reject it?"

"I reject nothing before understanding what is meant."

The teacher smiled.

"Then you are already less irritating than most theologians."

They sat together.

The old man said,

"Truth is light."

"Often."

"Falsehood is darkness."

"Often."

"Goodness serves light."

"Yes."

"Evil serves darkness."

The Nazarene asked,

"Does darkness possess substance?"

The old man answered,

"It opposes light."

Jesus pointed toward the sacred flame.

"If the flame grows, where does darkness go?"

"It retreats."

"Does it travel somewhere?"

The old man smiled.

"You believe darkness is absence."

"I believe ignorance possesses no independent eternity."

The teacher asked,

"Then why is cruelty so powerful?"

"Because absence can organize itself through beings who do not see."

The teacher considered this.

Jesus continued,

"A room without light remains dark until someone carries a lamp."

"A society without wisdom may remain cruel for generations."

"Absence does not mean harmlessness."

The old man nodded.

"You are a strange Jew."

"I have been told."

News of the New Religion

While staying in the city, Judas encountered merchants who had recently traveled through Syria.

They spoke of communities devoted to the crucified Nazarene.

One merchant said,

"They claim their teacher rose bodily from the dead."

Judas remained silent.

Another said,

"They eat bread and drink wine in his memory."

A third added,

"Some say he was the only Son of God."

Judas returned immediately to Jesus.

"It is happening."

"What?"

"They are building the religion you warned about."

The Nazarene continued repairing a wooden stool.

Judas stared at him.

"Did you hear me?"

"Yes."

"Why are you repairing furniture?"

"Because the stool is broken."

Judas became angry.

"They are saying you rose from the dead."

"I know."

"They say you are the only Son of God."

"I expected this."

"They say your blood saves humanity."

Jesus stopped working.

"That teaching must be opposed."

"How?"

"Write."

"They will not believe me."

"Write anyway."

Judas sat beside him.

"What should I say?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Say that sacrifice belongs to the logic of rulers."

"Say that the Hidden Father requires no payment."

"Say that no innocent person's suffering removes another person's responsibility."

"Say that transformation cannot be transferred like a debt between accounts."

"Say that I taught awakening."

"Say that I lived."

Judas looked at him.

"May I use your name?"

"Yes."

"Will this not reveal that you survived?"

"Those who believe the resurrection story will say your account is false."

Judas laughed bitterly.

"Then we are protected by disbelief."

"Sometimes false certainty creates strange shelters."

The Gospel of the Living Nazarene

Judas began collecting sayings and memories.

The Witness also dictated his account.

Others contributed stories.

But Jesus insisted upon distinctions.

"This saying I spoke."

"This one I did not."

"This story is mostly accurate."

"This story has been enlarged."

"This healing occurred differently."

"This argument happened in another village."

"This saying came from an eastern teacher."

Judas asked,

"Should we remove it?"

Jesus answered,

"Did I teach it afterward?"

"Yes."

"Then preserve it honestly."

"People prefer teachers who invent everything themselves."

"Then people prefer mythology."

The Nazarene warned them that no Gospel would preserve him perfectly.

He said,

"Memory changes."

"Language changes."

Stories change."

"Meaning changes when carried into another culture."

Judas asked,

"Then why write?"

"Because imperfect memory is not the same as no memory."

"How shall future readers know what is true?"

"They will not know everything."

"That seems unsatisfactory."

"Reality does not owe satisfaction to the historian."

The Brahmin and the Nazarene

Farther east the travelers encountered a learned Brahmin who had heard that the Nazarene taught concerning Brahma gods.

The Brahmin approached him.

"I am told that you claim the God of your people is a Brahma deity."

The Nazarene answered,

"I have used that comparison."

"Which Brahma?"

"The precise classification matters less than the principle."

The Brahmin frowned.

"It matters to scholars."

Jesus smiled.

"I expected that."

The Brahmin sat with him.

"Explain your teaching."

The Nazarene said,

"A being may inhabit a realm beyond human perception."

"Yes."

"He may possess immense lifespan."

"Yes."

"Great power."

"Yes."

"He may appear before humans and be worshiped as supreme."

"Yes."

"Yet none of this makes him ultimate reality."

The Brahmin nodded.

"Agreed."

The Nazarene continued,

"The covenant deity of my ancestors appears to me as such a ruler."

The Brahmin asked,

"Do you hate him?"

"No."

"Do you worship him?"

"No."

"Do you deny his existence?"

"No."

"Then what relationship do you have with him?"

The Nazarene thought carefully.

"Historical gratitude without metaphysical submission."

The Brahmin smiled.

"That is a very precise answer."

"I occasionally give them."

The Witness laughed from nearby.

"Rarely."

The God Beyond Brahma

The Brahmin asked,

"What lies beyond Brahma?"

The Nazarene answered,

"If I tell you a name, what will you do with it?"

"Examine it."

"And then?"

"Define it."

"And then?"

"Teach it."

"And then?"

"Others may preserve the teaching."

Jesus smiled.

"And eventually someone will kill another person over the definition."

The Brahmin laughed.

"Perhaps."

The Nazarene continued,

"The Ultimate cannot be another being standing above lesser beings."

"Then it is the highest being?"

"No."

"Being itself?"

"Perhaps closer."

"Pure consciousness?"

"Still a description."

"Emptiness?"

"Another description."

"Absolute unity?"

"Another."

The Brahmin asked,

"Then nothing can be said?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Things can be said."

"But every saying must know how to bow."

The Debate Concerning the Self

The Nazarene also encountered contemplatives who denied that any permanent self could be found.

One teacher asked him,

"You speak of a Light within. Is this an eternal soul?"

Jesus answered,

"If by soul you mean a permanent little person hidden inside the changing person, no."

"Then what is the Light?"

"A symbol for awakened knowing."

"Is knowing permanent?"

"Whatever can be identified as an object of experience is conditioned."

The teacher smiled.

"You have learned well."

The Nazarene replied,

"I am still learning."

Judas asked,

"Then how does this fit with Seth?"

Jesus answered,

"Seth is not an eternal ego."

"What is he?"

"The archetype of awakened humanity."

"Does an archetype exist independently?"

"Do not turn a useful symbol into another metaphysical prison."

Judas sighed.

The eastern teacher laughed.

"I understand why your disciples become frustrated."

Jesus answered,

"They practice patience."

Judas said,

"Against our will."

The Christ Without Ownership

In a village beyond the great trade routes, people gathered to hear the Nazarene.

A man asked,

"Are you the Christ?"

Jesus answered,

"Yes."

Judas looked surprised.

The crowd murmured.

Then the Nazarene continued,

"And so may you become."

The man asked,

"How can there be many Christs?"

"How can there be many awakened people?"

"Is that all Christ means?"

"Do you think awakening is small?"

The man said,

"I was taught that the Christ is a cosmic ruler."

Jesus replied,

"Then you are searching for another archon."

The crowd became quiet.

The Nazarene continued,

"The Christ does not dominate consciousness."

"The Christ is consciousness liberated from domination."

"The Christ does not create servants."

"The Christ awakens companions."

"The Christ does not say, 'I alone possess the Light.'"

"The Christ says, 'See the Light where you stand.'"

A woman asked,

"Then why do people need teachers?"

"To learn."

"And afterward?"

"To walk."

"Should we leave the teacher?"

"If necessary."

"Would that not be betrayal?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"A teacher who calls growth betrayal has become an archon."

Judas Departs

After traveling with the Nazarene for many months, Judas prepared to return westward.

He had completed the first collection of his account.

The evening before his departure, he sat with Jesus beneath the stars.

"Will they hate me forever?"

"Not forever."

"How long?"

"Perhaps a very long time."

Judas laughed.

"That is not comforting."

"I did not wish to lie."

Judas held the manuscript in his hands.

"Will this survive?"

"I do not know."

"Will the truth survive?"

"Fragments."

"Only fragments?"

"Fragments are enough to disturb certainty."

Judas looked toward him.

"Was I truly your closest disciple?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"Now you seek rank again."

Judas laughed.

"I had to try."

Jesus said,

"You were the disciple I trusted with one particular burden."

"That is less impressive."

"It is more accurate."

Judas became quiet.

Then he asked,

"Will we meet again?"

"Perhaps."

"In this life?"

"Perhaps."

Judas shook his head.

"Still no simple answers."

The Nazarene embraced him.

"Travel safely."

Judas departed westward before sunrise.

He carried his account.

He carried the secret of the substitution.

He carried the teaching of the God beyond gods.

And he carried the burden of a name that history had already begun transforming into a synonym for betrayal.

The Witness Remains

The Witness watched Judas leave.

"Should I write a Gospel also?"

Jesus asked,

"Do you wish to?"

"No."

"Then do not."

"What should I do?"

"What can you do?"

The Witness thought.

"Steal."

Jesus looked at him.

"Something else."

"Fight."

"Something else."

"I know roads."

"Good."

"I know which roads are dangerous."

"Better."

"I know smugglers."

The Nazarene raised an eyebrow.

"Useful, perhaps."

The Witness smiled.

Thus the man once condemned as a criminal became a guide for travelers, refugees, wandering teachers, and those fleeing persecution.

Years later he would say,

"I once used hidden roads to escape justice."

"Then I learned to use them to help people escape injustice."

The Gospel Written in Lives

As the Nazarene continued eastward, he became less interested in establishing a single written account.

He told his companions,

"The greatest Gospel is not a book."

A scribe asked,

"Then what is it?"

"A transformed life."

The scribe objected,

"Lives disappear."

"So do books."

"But books may survive centuries."

"So may cruelty."

"Then what should be preserved?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Preserve words."

"Preserve practices."

"Preserve memories."

"Preserve communities."

"But do not imagine preservation is awakening."

The scribe asked,

"What is awakening?"

Jesus pointed toward a servant carrying water for the gathering.

"Help him."

The scribe frowned.

"I asked a philosophical question."

The Nazarene stood and took one of the water jars.

"So did I."

The Disappearance from History

As years passed, reliable reports concerning the Nazarene became rare.

Some placed him in Persia.

Others in the mountains beyond.

Some said he entered India.

Others said he reached communities near the great northern routes.

Some claimed he lived among contemplatives until old age.

Others said he returned secretly to the lands of his youth.

The hidden communities disagreed about geography.

But they agreed upon several things.

The Nazarene did not die upon the cross.

He did not rise bodily from a tomb.

He did not claim to be the exclusive Christ.

He did not teach that his blood purchased forgiveness.

He did not identify the covenant ruler with the Ultimate Mystery.

He taught that the God of his ancestors belonged among the great heavenly rulers of conditioned existence.

He taught that even gods remain beneath the Nameless Source.

He taught that resurrection of dead flesh was wrong view when mistaken for liberation.

He taught awakening before death.

He taught the Bridal Chamber as the reconciliation of divided consciousness.

He taught the Christ as a state of awakened being available to all.

He revealed himself as the manifestation of the Solar Seth, the ancient pattern of the Stranger and Revealer.

And he taught that even this revelation must not become another idol.

The Last Teaching in the City

Before leaving the great eastern city where he had remained for several years, the Nazarene gave a final public teaching.

A large crowd gathered.

Some expected a revelation concerning the end of the world.

Others expected secret cosmology.

Others wanted miracles.

The Nazarene said,

"You have traveled far to hear mysteries."

The crowd waited.

He continued,

"Feed those who are hungry."

Some were disappointed.

"Do not humiliate those you help."

"Examine your own capacity for cruelty."

"Do not confuse confidence with knowledge."

"Do not worship rulers."

"Do not worship teachers."

"Do not worship books."

"Do not worship symbols."

"Do not worship the sun."

"Do not worship me."

A man shouted,

"Then what should we worship?"

The Nazarene answered,

"If by worship you mean surrendering conscience, nothing."

The crowd murmured.

He continued,

"If by worship you mean reverence, then become reverent before the mystery of existence."

"Before consciousness."

"Before suffering."

"Before love."

"Before the unknown."

"Before the Nameless Source that cannot be possessed."

A woman asked,

"What is your final commandment?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Awaken."

Another asked,

"And after awakening?"

Jesus smiled.

"Help others awaken without making them dependent upon you."

A child near the front asked,

"And after everyone awakens?"

The Nazarene laughed.

"Then perhaps teachers may finally rest."

The crowd laughed with him.

And when the laughter ended, the Nazarene walked away from the gathering without ceremony.

Some followed.

Some remained.

Some understood.

Some did not.

The sun descended toward the western horizon behind him.

But the Nazarene continued east.

For the Gospel of the Stranger could not be contained by Jerusalem, Rome, any single nation, or any single religion.

The Light had no empire.

The Christ had no owner.

And the Hidden Father had no name.

Chapter Twenty

The Kingdom Without a King

In the years after Judas departed westward, the Nazarene continued teaching among communities beyond the borders of Rome.

He had become older.

The roads tired him more quickly.

His beard had begun to whiten.

The injuries he had received during his arrest troubled him during cold weather.

Sometimes younger disciples expected the Solar Seth to possess a body untouched by age.

The Nazarene corrected them.

"The body changes."

A disciple asked,

"Even the body of the Christ?"

Jesus answered,

"The Christ is not a special kind of flesh."

"Then what is it?"

"Awakened consciousness."

"And awakened consciousness grows old?"

"The body through which it shines does."

The disciple asked,

"Then you will die?"

"Yes."

"Will Seth die?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"Does the sunrise die when one person closes his eyes?"

The Question of the Kingdom

One of the oldest questions followed Jesus into the East.

"When will the Kingdom come?"

He had been asked this in Galilee.

He had been asked it in Judea.

He had been asked it in Syria.

Now he was asked it in a village thousands of miles from Nazareth.

The Nazarene laughed.

A student asked,

"Why do you laugh?"

"Because I have spent half my life answering this question."

"Then perhaps you have not answered it clearly."

Jesus considered this.

"That is possible."

The students were surprised.

The Nazarene sat beneath a tree.

"Then I shall try again."

The people gathered around him.

He said,

"The Kingdom does not arrive with armies."

"It does not descend as a city from the clouds."

"It does not begin when one nation defeats another."

"It does not begin when the correct priest sits upon the correct throne."

"It does not begin when everyone joins one religion."

"It does not begin when the dead climb from their graves."

"It does not begin when the world is destroyed."

A student asked,

"Then when does it begin?"

Jesus touched the earth.

"Here."

He touched his chest.

"Here."

Then he pointed toward the gathered community.

"And between."

Within and Between

A woman asked,

"Is the Kingdom within us?"

"Yes."

"Then society does not matter?"

The Nazarene answered,

"If the Kingdom remains only inside your imagination while your neighbor starves, you have confused fantasy with awakening."

Another asked,

"Then the Kingdom is political?"

"It has political consequences."

"Is it a government?"

"No."

"Can governments serve it?"

"Sometimes."

"Can they oppose it?"

"Often."

The woman asked,

"Then what is the Kingdom?"

The Nazarene replied,

"It is the condition in which domination loses legitimacy."

"It is consciousness freed from the rulers within."

"It is community freed from unnecessary hierarchy."

"It is bread shared without humiliation."

"It is knowledge taught without creating dependence."

"It is justice without revenge."

"It is freedom without abandonment."

"It is difference without separation."

"It is communion without possession."

A man said,

"That sounds impossible."

Jesus answered,

"Then practice the possible portion before declaring the whole impossible."

The Temptation of the Good King

In one eastern kingdom, a local governor heard of the Nazarene.

The governor was curious and invited him to court.

The disciples feared that Jesus would refuse and create unnecessary danger.

Instead he accepted.

The governor received him respectfully.

"I have heard that you teach a Kingdom."

"I do."

"Yet you oppose kings."

"I oppose domination."

"Is kingship necessarily domination?"

"No."

The governor seemed pleased.

"Then perhaps a righteous king can establish your Kingdom."

The Nazarene answered,

"No."

The governor's smile disappeared.

"You contradict yourself."

Jesus replied,

"A ruler may reduce suffering."

"He may restrain corruption."

"He may protect minorities."

"He may feed the hungry."

"He may establish fair courts."

"He may refuse unnecessary wars."

"Then why can he not establish the Kingdom?"

"Because awakening cannot be decreed."

The governor leaned forward.

"Can law not make people good?"

"It can restrain certain harms."

"Is that not goodness?"

"It is useful."

"But?"

Jesus answered,

"A person who does not steal only because a guard watches him has not overcome greed."

The governor said,

"Yet the merchant keeps his property."

"Yes."

"Then law works."

"For that purpose."

The governor asked,

"What more do you want?"

The Nazarene replied,

"A society in which fewer people desire to exploit one another."

The governor laughed.

"Then your Kingdom truly is impossible."

Jesus smiled.

"Perhaps your office requires you to believe that."

The Benevolent Archon

After leaving the court, a disciple asked,

"Was the governor an archon?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Do not turn the word into an insult for everyone with authority."

"Then what is an archon?"

"We have discussed this."

"Discuss it again."

Jesus smiled.

"Very well."

He continued walking.

"An archon is a ruler who forgets limitation."

"A power that presents itself as ultimate."

"An institution that exists for its own preservation."

"A pattern that demands unconscious participation."

"A voice that says, 'Without me, nothing is possible.'"

The disciple asked,

"Can a good ruler become an archon?"

"Yes."

"How?"

"By believing his goodness makes him indispensable."

"Can a spiritual teacher become an archon?"

"Very easily."

The disciples laughed.

Jesus continued,

"The cruel ruler says, 'Obey because I can harm you.'"

"The benevolent ruler says, 'Obey because I know what is best for you.'"

"Both may eventually fear the freedom of those beneath them."

A disciple asked,

"Then should there be no leaders?"

"Leadership is a function."

"Archonship is an identity."

The Community of Equals

In one settlement the Nazarene helped establish a community organized around shared labor.

The people disagreed over how leadership should work.

One group wanted Jesus to appoint a permanent spiritual successor.

He refused.

A man asked,

"What happens after you leave?"

"You continue."

"Who leads us?"

"Choose people suited to necessary tasks."

"For how long?"

"Until others are better suited."

"Who possesses final authority?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Why do you desire one?"

"To prevent disagreement."

"You cannot prevent disagreement."

"To preserve truth."

"One person cannot preserve truth."

"To maintain unity."

"Forced unity is not communion."

The man became frustrated.

"Then what structure do you recommend?"

Jesus answered,

"Enough structure to accomplish necessary work."

"Enough freedom to question those who coordinate it."

"Enough humility to change failed arrangements."

"Enough memory to learn from mistakes."

"Enough compassion that efficiency does not become cruelty."

A woman asked,

"Is this the Kingdom?"

"It may become one expression of it."

"Will it succeed?"

"I do not know."

The woman laughed.

"You helped establish something without knowing whether it will succeed?"

Jesus answered,

"That describes most human activity."

The Rich Man Returns

Years earlier, in Judea, the Nazarene had told a wealthy man that possessions may possess their owner.

Now, in the East, another wealthy merchant approached him.

The merchant said,

"I have heard that you tell the rich to surrender everything."

The Nazarene answered,

"Sometimes."

"Do you command me to give away my wealth?"

"I do not know enough about your life."

The merchant was surprised.

"Ask me."

"How did you obtain it?"

"Trade."

"Fairly?"

"Mostly."

The Nazarene raised an eyebrow.

The merchant smiled nervously.

"I have not always been fair."

"Then begin with restitution."

"To whom?"

"Those you harmed."

"Some are dead."

"Their families?"

"Some cannot be found."

"Then repair what can be repaired and direct the remainder toward reducing similar harm."

The merchant asked,

"Must I become poor?"

Jesus answered,

"Why is that your first concern?"

The merchant became silent.

Jesus continued,

"Perhaps your wealth can build wells."

"Perhaps it can free debtors."

"Perhaps it can support physicians."

"Perhaps it can create fair work."

"Perhaps it can corrupt you."

"Perhaps giving it away publicly would only create pride."

"Examine the conditions."

The merchant asked,

"Why not give one universal rule?"

"Because universal slogans often avoid particular responsibility."

The Poor Are Not Symbols

The Nazarene became angry when teachers used the poor merely as symbols of spiritual purity.

He said,

"Poverty is not automatically holiness."

"Hunger is not enlightenment."

"Illness is not a spiritual exercise when medicine is available."

"Homelessness is not freedom when imposed by desperation."

A monk objected,

"But voluntary poverty can liberate."

"Yes."

"Then poverty is good."

Jesus answered,

"Voluntary simplicity and involuntary deprivation are not the same."

The monk said,

"Attachment causes suffering."

"Yes."

"Then the poor should learn nonattachment."

The Nazarene looked at him sternly.

"The hungry person needs bread before your lecture."

The monk lowered his eyes.

Jesus continued,

"Teach nonattachment first to those who possess enough to become attached."

The Christ and Society

A student asked,

"If everyone attained Christ-consciousness, would governments disappear?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"If everyone awakened completely, many institutions would become unnecessary."

"Then should we destroy them now?"

"No."

"Why not?"

"Because imagining a mature humanity does not make humanity mature."

The student asked,

"Then what should we do?"

"Reduce domination where possible."

"Build cooperation."

"Protect the vulnerable."

"Teach discernment."

"Share knowledge."

"Create institutions that can be corrected."

"Prevent power from hiding itself."

"Do not confuse gradual work with failure."

The student asked,

"Will history eventually reach perfection?"

Jesus answered,

"I do not know."

"Then why work?"

The Nazarene stopped.

"Do you help an injured person only if all future suffering will end?"

"No."

"Then do not demand cosmic guarantees before practicing compassion."

The Kingdom and the Brahma Gods

Some students asked whether the Kingdom existed in the higher heavens.

The Nazarene answered,

"There are realms more subtle than this one."

"Are they perfect?"

"No conditioned realm is the Ultimate."

"Are there peaceful heavens?"

"Yes."

"Long-lived beings?"

"Yes."

"Radiant cities?"

"Perhaps descriptions of subtle realities appear in many cultures."

"Then should we seek rebirth there?"

The Nazarene answered,

"A beautiful prison may cause the prisoner to forget the door."

The student asked,

"Is heaven a prison?"

"Anything mistaken for the Ultimate becomes a prison."

"Even a realm without suffering?"

"If impermanent, attachment to it prepares future grief."

The student asked,

"Then where should we go?"

Jesus smiled.

"You continue imagining liberation as travel."

The Kingdom Is Spread Out

One morning the Nazarene walked with Thomas, who had rejoined him after years of separate travel according to the hidden eastern tradition.

Thomas asked,

"Why do people fail to see the Kingdom?"

Jesus bent down and picked up a stone.

He handed it to Thomas.

"What do you see?"

"A stone."

"Only?"

Thomas examined it.

"Shape."

"Texture."

"Weight."

"What else?"

Thomas smiled.

"You are going to tell me."

Jesus answered,

"No."

They continued walking.

After a while Thomas said,

"The Kingdom is spread across the earth, but people do not see it."

The Nazarene looked at him.

"Preserve that saying."

Thomas laughed.

"Your saying or mine?"

"Does it matter?"

"It will matter to historians."

"Then let them argue."

The Return of Thomas

Thomas had traveled through communities farther east and had developed his own way of expressing the teaching.

He told Jesus,

"I teach people to examine themselves."

"Good."

"I tell them that whoever knows the world but fails to know himself remains poor."

"Good."

"I tell them the Kingdom is within and outside."

"Good."

Thomas looked suspicious.

"You agree too easily."

The Nazarene laughed.

"Would you prefer disagreement?"

"I prepared arguments."

"Save them for tomorrow."

Thomas asked,

"Some people are collecting your sayings."

"I know."

"Many differ."

"I know."

"Should we establish an authorized collection?"

Jesus considered this.

"It may be useful."

"Then you agree?"

"If you remember that authorized does not mean infallible."

Thomas sighed.

"You place a warning inside every answer."

"Warnings are sometimes useful."

The Living Sayings

Thomas began reading sayings he had preserved.

Some the Nazarene remembered.

Some he remembered differently.

Some he did not remember saying at all.

Thomas protested,

"I heard this from a disciple who heard it from you."

Jesus asked,

"Which disciple?"

Thomas named him.

The Nazarene laughed.

"He improves stories."

"Then remove it?"

"Is the saying wise?"

Thomas read it again.

Jesus thought.

"Keep it."

"But you did not say it."

"Then do not claim certainty that I did."

Thomas said,

"Future copyists will ignore that distinction."

"Probably."

"Does this not trouble you?"

"Yes."

"What can we do?"

"Teach readers to seek wisdom rather than worship authorship."

Thomas shook his head.

"You have very high expectations of readers."

The King Who Lives Inside

The Nazarene later taught a parable concerning kingship.

He said,

"A city rebelled against its king."

"The people entered the palace."

"They removed the king from the throne."

"They destroyed his statues."

"They burned his decrees."

"They declared themselves free."

"But each citizen returned home carrying a small image of the king inside the mind."

"The father ruled the family as the king had ruled him."

"The merchant ruled the worker."

"The teacher humiliated the student."

"The elder silenced the young."

"The strong dominated the weak."

"And soon they built another palace."

A student asked,

"What should they have done?"

Jesus answered,

"Removing the outer king may be necessary."

"But the inner king must also be understood."

"Can meditation overthrow tyranny?"

"No."

"Can revolution awaken consciousness?"

"Not automatically."

"Then which comes first?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Why must liberation have only one door?"

The Three Revolutions

The Nazarene spoke of three revolutions.

"The first is the revolution of circumstances."

"The hungry receive food."

"The enslaved are freed."

"The oppressed gain protection."

"Unjust structures are changed."

"The second is the revolution of consciousness."

"Fear is understood."

"Hatred is released."

"False identity is seen through."

"Craving loses authority."

"Ignorance is illuminated."

"The third is the revolution of relationship."

"People cease treating one another as objects."

"Communion replaces possession."

"Leadership becomes service."

"Difference no longer requires domination."

A student asked,

"Which is greatest?"

Jesus answered,

"When separated, each becomes distorted."

"Outer revolution without inner transformation may replace one ruler with another."

"Inner transformation without concern for suffering may become spiritual selfishness."

"Community without truth may become conformity."

"The three must correct one another."

No King but Awakening

In his later years, the Nazarene became increasingly unwilling to use royal language for the Hidden Father.

A student asked,

"Why did you once say Kingdom of God?"

"Because people understood the image."

"And now?"

"Now I see its danger more clearly."

"What should we say instead?"

"The Realm of Awakening."

"The Communion of the Living."

"The Freedom of the Light."

"The Kingdom Without a King."

The student asked,

"Which is correct?"

"Use the one that opens rather than closes understanding."

"Will people not become confused by many names?"

"They are already confused by one."

The Last Visit of the Witness

Many years after the escape from Jerusalem, the Witness returned to visit the Nazarene.

He was older.

He walked with difficulty.

But he still complained about food.

"This soup is terrible."

The Nazarene tasted it.

"You are correct."

The Witness looked surprised.

"I expected a parable."

"Bad soup sometimes requires no parable."

They laughed.

That evening they spoke privately.

The Witness asked,

"Do you ever think about the hill?"

"Yes."

"The two men?"

"Yes."

"I still dream about them."

"So do I."

The Witness looked at him.

"People say you never suffered because you escaped."

"They are mistaken."

"Do you regret it?"

The Nazarene remained silent.

Finally he said,

"I regret that the world was arranged so that anyone stood upon those crosses."

"That is not what I asked."

"I know."

The Witness waited.

Jesus said,

"I do not know how to judge the whole event."

The Witness nodded.

"That is the first answer you have given me that I completely understand."

They sat together in silence.

The Kingdom in the Kitchen

The next morning, the Nazarene entered the community kitchen.

Two young disciples were arguing about the proper interpretation of his teachings concerning the Aeons.

One said,

"Barbelo must be understood as the first manifestation of the Invisible Spirit."

The other replied,

"No. Barbelo is the primordial field of awakened potential."

The argument became louder.

Jesus entered.

Both turned toward him.

"Teacher, which interpretation is correct?"

The Nazarene looked around.

Several bowls remained unwashed.

The fire was nearly extinguished.

An elderly woman was carrying water alone.

Jesus said,

"The correct interpretation is helping her."

One disciple protested,

"But our theological question—"

"Will remain available after the water jars are carried."

The Witness, watching from the doorway, laughed.

"The Gospel according to the Kitchen."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Perhaps my most useful Gospel."

The Hidden Kingdom

That evening Jesus gave a final teaching to the community.

He said,

"Do not wait for the Kingdom as though waiting for an army."

"Do not search the sky."

"Do not search graves."

"Do not search royal bloodlines."

"Do not search secret dates."

"Do not search for a final emperor."

"Do not search for a single savior who will perform awakening for you."

A student asked,

"Where, then, should we search?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Examine the one who searches."

"Examine the world that formed that person."

"Examine the suffering around you."

"Examine the systems that benefit from unconsciousness."

"Examine the fear that makes domination attractive."

"Examine the desire to be ruled by certainty."

"Examine the desire to rule others."

"And then act."

The student asked,

"What action?"

Jesus replied,

"The next compassionate action that wisdom makes possible."

"Is that the Kingdom?"

"It is one of its doors."

The Sun at Evening

At sunset the Nazarene walked outside the settlement.

The Witness joined him.

They watched the sun descend.

The Witness asked,

"If you are the Solar Seth, what happens at sunset?"

Jesus smiled.

"The same thing that happens every evening."

"The sun disappears."

"From our sight."

"And returns."

"From our perspective."

The Witness laughed.

"You cannot even allow sunrise to remain simple."

The Nazarene looked toward the horizon.

Then he said,

"The symbol is not about a ball of fire traveling beneath the earth."

"It is about the Light that appears lost and is discovered again."

"The wisdom buried beneath generations of ignorance."

"The compassion hidden beneath fear."

"The human being concealed beneath identity."

"The Christ hidden within ordinary consciousness."

"The Seth forgotten within the descendants of Seth."

The Witness asked,

"Are all people descendants of Seth?"

Jesus answered,

"Not by blood."

"Then how?"

"By possibility."

The last light disappeared.

The Witness asked,

"And if they never awaken?"

The Nazarene replied,

"Then the possibility remains unrealized."

"Forever?"

Jesus looked into the darkening sky.

"Do not make eternity from one night."

They returned to the community.

No trumpet announced the Kingdom.

No angel crowned a king.

No dead body emerged from the earth.

No god descended upon a mountain.

People prepared food.

Children played.

An argument was resolved.

A traveler was given a place to sleep.

An elderly woman received help carrying water.

A teacher admitted uncertainty.

A wealthy merchant began making restitution.

A former criminal guided refugees along a hidden road.

A community questioned its leaders.

A student abandoned the desire to possess final answers.

And the Nazarene said,

"Behold the Kingdom."

For the Kingdom of the Hidden Father had no throne.

The Christ possessed no crown.

The Solar Seth commanded no army.

And the Nameless Source remained beyond every name.

Yet wherever ignorance weakened, wherever domination was refused, wherever compassion and wisdom entered the Bridal Chamber, and wherever one human being recognized the living mystery within another, the Kingdom Without a King had already begun.

Chapter Twenty-One

The Unbegotten Light

In the final period of the Nazarene’s teaching, those who gathered around him noticed that his language changed.

When he was young, he had spoken often of the Kingdom.

Later, he spoke of the Hidden Father.

Later still, of the Nameless Source.

In his old age, he sometimes used no name at all.

A disciple asked him,

"Teacher, why have your words changed?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Because words are boats."

"Did your earlier boats sink?"

"No."

"Then why leave them?"

"Because one does not carry the boat after crossing the river."

The disciple asked,

"Have you crossed?"

Jesus smiled.

"Far enough to know there is another river."

The Invisible Spirit

One winter evening, the disciples gathered around a fire.

Snow covered the mountains beyond the settlement.

A young student who had studied the traditions of the Sethians asked,

"Master, teach us concerning the Invisible Spirit."

The Nazarene said,

"What would you like to know?"

"What is it?"

Jesus remained silent.

The student waited.

After some time he asked again,

"What is the Invisible Spirit?"

Jesus said nothing.

The student became uncomfortable.

"Master?"

The Nazarene looked at him.

"You asked concerning that which cannot be made an object."

"Yes."

"And now you are waiting for an object made of words."

The student said,

"Then nothing can be taught?"

Jesus answered,

"Much can be taught."

"Then teach us."

The Nazarene pointed toward the fire.

"Is the Nameless Source fire?"

"No."

He pointed toward the darkness beyond the fire.

"Is it darkness?"

"No."

"Is it being?"

The student hesitated.

"Perhaps."

"Then what is nonbeing?"

"I do not know."

"If you call the Source being, you create an opposite called nonbeing."

The student nodded.

"If you call it light, you create darkness."

"Yes."

"If you call it one, the mind imagines many."

"Yes."

"If you call it consciousness, the mind imagines an object called consciousness."

The student asked,

"Then what remains?"

The Nazarene answered,

"That which remains when every answer is released."

Not This

Thomas, who was present, asked,

"Can negation reveal the Source?"

Jesus answered,

"It can remove idols."

"Is the Source a person?"

"Not as humans are persons."

"Is it impersonal?"

"That also becomes a limitation."

"Does it think?"

"Not through succession of thoughts."

"Does it possess will?"

"Not as a ruler deciding between alternatives."

"Does it love?"

The Nazarene paused.

"The word love points more safely than the word domination."

"But is the Source love?"

"If you turn love into a definition, you have already reduced it."

Thomas laughed.

"You have become more difficult with age."

Jesus smiled.

"I have had more time to discover how often I was too certain."

The younger disciples were surprised.

One asked,

"Were some of your earlier teachings wrong?"

"Certainly."

The room became silent.

The Nazarene continued,

"Why does this surprise you?"

A disciple answered,

"Because you are the Revealer."

"A window may be cleaned more than once."

The Teacher Who Changes

The disciple asked,

"Which teachings did you change?"

Jesus thought for a moment.

"When I was young, I divided the world too sharply."

"Between good and evil?"

"Between the spiritual and material."

He continued,

"I once believed liberation meant escaping the world."

"And now?"

"Now I believe escape may be another form of attachment."

The disciples listened carefully.

Jesus said,

"I once spoke of the archons as though they were entirely external."

"And now?"

"I understand more clearly how human consciousness participates in their manifestation."

"I once imagined higher realms as necessarily purer."

"And now?"

"A luminous being may still be limited."

"A subtle world may still be conditioned."

"A long life is not eternity."

"Power is not wisdom."

"Radiance is not liberation."

Thomas asked,

"Do you regret your earlier teachings?"

The Nazarene answered,

"I regret only when certainty prevented learning."

The First Thought

A student asked concerning Barbelo.

"Is Barbelo the Mother of the Living?"

The Nazarene answered,

"That is one symbol."

"Is she the First Thought of the Invisible Spirit?"

"That is another."

"Is she real?"

Jesus smiled.

Thomas whispered,

"Now you have done it."

The students laughed.

The Nazarene said,

"When you ask whether something is real, first ask what kind of reality you mean."

The student said,

"I mean: does Barbelo exist?"

"Does compassion exist?"

"Yes."

"Where?"

"In people."

"Only there?"

The student hesitated.

Jesus continued,

"Does mathematics exist?"

"Yes."

"Where?"

"I do not know."

"Does a nation exist?"

"Yes."

"Can you point to the nation apart from people, land, institutions, memories, and agreements?"

"No."

"Then existence has many modes."

The student asked,

"What mode belongs to Barbelo?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Barbelo is the first mirror through which the unknowable becomes symbolically knowable."

"Is she a goddess?"

"If that language helps."

"Should we worship her?"

"No."

"Why?"

"Because the mirror is not the Light."

The Mother and the Father

Another disciple asked,

"Why call the Ultimate Father?"

Jesus answered,

"Because that was the language available to many of my first listeners."

"Is the Source male?"

"No."

"Female?"

"No."

"Both?"

"That may be useful symbolically."

"Neither?"

"Closer, if you do not turn neither into another object."

The disciple smiled.

Jesus continued,

"The Source is not a heavenly man."

"Nor a heavenly woman."

"Nor a combination of two biological sexes."

"Human language reaches upward with metaphors drawn from human experience."

"Father."

"Mother."

"Womb."

"Light."

"Depth."

"Silence."

"Mind."

"Spirit."

"Source."

"Emptiness."

"Fullness."

"Each points."

"None arrives."

The Great Depth

The Nazarene sometimes used the word Depth.

A student asked,

"Why Depth?"

"Because the surface mind believes reality is exhausted by appearances."

"Is the material world only surface?"

"No."

"Then what is surface?"

"Whatever is seen without understanding its conditions."

The student asked,

"Can a person be a surface?"

"You may know someone's name, occupation, nationality, religion, and appearance while knowing almost nothing of the person."

"Then depth is hidden essence?"

"Be careful."

"Why?"

"Because then you imagine a secret permanent object behind appearances."

"What is depth, then?"

"The inexhaustibility of relation."

The student frowned.

Jesus smiled.

"Good."

"Why good?"

"Confusion sometimes means an old category has failed."

The Silence Before God

The Nazarene taught his students a form of prayer without images.

He said,

"Sit."

"Do not ask for wealth."

"Do not ask for victory."

"Do not ask for enemies to suffer."

"Do not imagine a throne."

"Do not imagine a face."

"Do not imagine light."

"Do not imagine darkness."

"Do not imagine the Source watching you."

"Do not imagine the Source absent."

A disciple asked,

"What should we do?"

"Notice."

"What?"

"Whatever arises."

"And then?"

"Do not cling."

"And then?"

"Notice what arises next."

"And when nothing arises?"

"Do not become proud."

The disciple laughed.

The Nazarene continued,

"If peace comes, do not possess it."

"If fear comes, examine it."

"If desire comes, know it."

"If memory comes, see it."

"If an image of God comes, release it."

"If an image of yourself comes, release it."

"Remain without demanding an experience."

The Vision of Light

A young contemplative approached Jesus excitedly.

"Teacher, during prayer I saw a great light."

The Nazarene answered,

"Good."

"Was it the Invisible Spirit?"

"No."

The student looked disappointed.

"How do you know?"

"Because you saw it."

"Then visions are worthless?"

"I did not say that."

"What was the light?"

"I do not know."

"It felt infinite."

"Feelings can be powerful."

"It spoke to me."

"What did it say?"

"That I have been chosen above the others."

The Nazarene laughed.

The student became offended.

"Why do you laugh?"

"Because the archon of pride has learned to shine."

The other disciples laughed.

Jesus raised his hand.

"Do not mock him."

Then he turned back to the student.

"Perhaps you had a genuine vision."

"Then I am chosen?"

"Why must the vision make you superior?"

The student became quiet.

Jesus continued,

"Judge visions by their fruit."

"If a vision makes you compassionate, learn from it."

"If it makes you humble, receive it carefully."

"If it reveals something useful, test it."

"But if it tells you that you are spiritually superior to everyone around you, be cautious."

The student asked,

"Can luminous beings deceive?"

"Yes."

"Can the mind deceive itself?"

"Yes."

"How do I know the difference?"

"Sometimes you do not."

Beyond the Creator

The Nazarene continued to teach concerning the distinction between the creator and the Unbegotten Source.

A student asked,

"Did the creator make this world?"

Jesus answered,

"Many causes participate in worlds."

"But is there a Demiurge?"

"There are formative intelligences."

"Is one supreme among them?"

"Supreme within what domain?"

The student became frustrated.

Jesus said,

"You want a single craftsman because human minds prefer stories with characters."

"Then the Demiurge is only a symbol?"

"I did not say only."

The student waited.

Jesus continued,

"The image of the Demiurge expresses a profound error: conditioned intelligence mistaking itself for the source of its own conditions."

"Does this happen cosmically?"

"Perhaps."

"Psychologically?"

"Certainly."

"Politically?"

"Frequently."

"Religiously?"

Jesus laughed.

"Very frequently."

Yaldabaoth Within

The Nazarene said,

"Every time a person says, 'There is nothing beyond my understanding,' Yaldabaoth speaks."

"Every time an institution says, 'Outside us there is no truth,' Yaldabaoth speaks."

"Every time a ruler says, 'Without me there is chaos,' Yaldabaoth speaks."

"Every time a teacher says, 'Without my permission you cannot awaken,' Yaldabaoth speaks."

"Every time a scripture is used to end sincere examination, Yaldabaoth speaks."

A disciple asked,

"Then Yaldabaoth is arrogance?"

"Cosmic arrogance."

"Is he also ignorance?"

"Ignorance possessing authority."

"Can Yaldabaoth awaken?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"I hope so."

The disciple was surprised.

"You hope for the salvation of the Demiurge?"

"If ignorance can never end, liberation is impossible."

The Salvation of the Gods

This teaching became one of the most controversial teachings of the Nazarene's later years.

He taught that gods themselves may require liberation.

A student asked,

"How can a god be saved?"

"The same way anyone is saved."

"Through gnosis?"

"Through awakening from false identification."

"Can a god possess ego?"

"Why not?"

"Because gods are greater than humans."

"Greater power does not mean freedom from delusion."

"Can the God of Israel awaken?"

The Nazarene answered,

"If he remains conditioned, awakening remains meaningful."

"Would he then cease being God?"

"He might cease needing the title."

The student laughed.

Jesus continued,

"Perhaps the final liberation of a ruler is the surrender of the throne."

The Solar Seth Reconsidered

As the Nazarene grew older, some followers began worshiping him as the embodiment of Seth.

He strongly opposed this.

A group arrived carrying a solar image.

They bowed before him.

Jesus said,

"Stand."

They remained kneeling.

He repeated,

"Stand."

Their leader said,

"We honor the return of Seth."

The Nazarene answered,

"Then stand as children of Seth."

The leader said,

"You are the Solar God."

Jesus replied,

"I am an old man with painful knees."

Some disciples laughed.

The visitors were confused.

Jesus continued,

"The Solar Seth is not my private identity."

"Then you deny being Seth?"

"No."

The visitors looked relieved.

Jesus added,

"I deny being the only manifestation of Seth."

Their relief disappeared.

The Nazarene said,

"Seth is the awakened Stranger."

"The Human who remembers the Light beyond the rulers."

"The one who enters systems without inwardly belonging to domination."

"The sun is his symbol because light reveals without demanding possession."

"But the symbol must return you to your own possibility."

The leader asked,

"Can I become Seth?"

Jesus answered,

"That is the teaching."

The Christ Reconsidered

A student asked,

"Then Christ and Seth are states of consciousness?"

"These words point toward awakening."

"Are they identical?"

"Not entirely."

"What is the difference?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Seth emphasizes remembrance."

"Christ emphasizes anointing."

"Seth is the Stranger who remembers origin beyond the rulers."

"Christ is the consciousness made transparent to the Living Light."

"Can one exist without the other?"

"Words can be distinguished more easily than awakening."

The student asked,

"Was there Christ-consciousness before you?"

"Yes."

"Will there be after you?"

"Yes."

"Can someone exceed your realization?"

The Nazarene answered immediately,

"I hope so."

The Offended Disciple

One disciple became deeply troubled by the Nazarene's humility.

He said,

"If you can be mistaken, how can we trust you?"

Jesus answered,

"Carefully."

"That is not enough."

"Then you seek certainty, not a teacher."

The disciple said,

"I left everything to follow you."

"Then perhaps you gave me something I did not ask for."

The disciple became angry.

"You should have warned us."

"I did."

"When?"

"Repeatedly."

The other disciples laughed softly.

The angry disciple shouted,

"Do not laugh!"

Jesus said,

"He is correct."

The room became silent.

The Nazarene turned toward the disciple.

"You feel betrayed because you wanted me to carry the burden of certainty."

The disciple began crying.

Jesus continued gently,

"I cannot carry it because no honest person can."

"Then what do I have?"

"Your capacity to examine."

"My conscience can fail."

"Yes."

"My reason can fail."

"Yes."

"My teachers can fail."

"Yes."

"My scripture can fail?"

"Your interpretation certainly can."

The disciple asked,

"Then where is safety?"

Jesus answered,

"There is no absolute psychological safety in certainty."

"Then I am afraid."

"I know."

"What should I do?"

"Learn to live without turning fear into a god."

The Last Idol

In one of his final teachings on apophatic gnosis, the Nazarene said,

"The last idol is often the idea of God."

The disciples were disturbed.

Thomas asked,

"Should we abandon God?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Abandon the object you have constructed."

"What remains?"

"Discover."

Thomas asked,

"Is atheism closer to truth?"

"Sometimes an atheist rejects an idol that a believer mistakes for God."

"And sometimes?"

"An atheist may turn denial into another certainty."

"Then who is correct?"

The Nazarene laughed.

"You continue asking the same question in new clothing."

Thomas smiled.

"Eventually you might answer it."

Jesus replied,

"Eventually you may stop needing me to."

The Unbegotten

At sunrise the following morning, the Nazarene walked with several disciples.

The sun rose above the mountains.

One disciple asked,

"Is this the symbol of Seth?"

"Yes."

"Is Seth the symbol of Christ?"

"In one manner."

"Is Christ the symbol of awakening?"

"Yes."

"Is awakening the Source?"

"No."

"What is beyond awakening?"

The Nazarene stopped.

The disciple waited.

Jesus said,

"Awakening is a word used within the dream."

The disciple felt a chill.

"Then what is outside the dream?"

The Nazarene looked toward the rising sun.

"No word spoken inside can contain it."

"Is that the Unbegotten?"

"If the word helps you release lesser gods."

"Is it the Invisible Spirit?"

"If the word teaches humility."

"Is it the Hidden Father?"

"If you do not imagine a heavenly patriarch."

"Is it Emptiness?"

"If you do not imagine nothingness."

"Is it the One?"

"If you do not imagine a number."

"Is it the Good?"

"If you do not make morality into a cosmic personality."

The disciple asked,

"What should I call it?"

Jesus answered,

"Call it what helps you release the name."

The Prayer Without Words

That evening the community gathered.

They expected the Nazarene to teach.

Instead he sat among them.

Minutes passed.

Then an hour.

No one spoke.

At first the disciples waited for the teaching to begin.

Gradually they understood that it already had.

The fire burned.

Someone coughed.

Wind moved against the walls.

A child fell asleep beside her mother.

The Witness, visiting once again, shifted uncomfortably because his back hurt.

Thomas opened his eyes, looked around, and closed them again.

The Nazarene sat quietly.

No throne appeared.

No god descended.

No voice spoke from heaven.

No dead body returned from a grave.

No doctrine was declared.

No enemy was condemned.

No chosen people were announced.

No final book was delivered.

There was only awareness.

Breath.

Impermanence.

Presence.

Relationship.

And the silence within which every name appeared and disappeared.

After a long time, the Nazarene stood.

A student asked,

"Was that the teaching?"

Jesus answered,

"Part of it."

"What is the rest?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"Live."

And he walked into the night.

For beyond the creator was the Unbegotten.

Beyond the covenant ruler was the Nameless Source.

Beyond Brahma was the mystery no heaven contained.

Beyond the Aeons was the Depth no cosmology exhausted.

Beyond Barbelo was that which no image reflected completely.

Beyond Seth was that which required no revealer.

Beyond Christ was that which required no title.

Beyond Jesus the Nazarene was the mystery from which Jesus arose and into which Jesus would pass.

And beyond every Gospel was the silence no book could contain.

Chapter Twenty-Two

The Death of the Nazarene

The Nazarene lived many years after Jerusalem.

How many, the hidden communities did not agree.

Some said he lived into his seventies.

Others said beyond eighty.

One community claimed that he reached an age greater still.

The Nazarene himself discouraged interest in the matter.

When a student asked,

"How long do you expect to live?"

Jesus answered,

"Until I die."

The student laughed.

"I mean how many years."

"So did I."

"But does age not matter?"

"It matters to the body."

"Then why not preserve the number?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"Because someday people will argue about the number and forget how to live."

The student said,

"You believe people will argue about anything."

"I have observed considerable evidence."

The Aging Body

In his final years the Nazarene could no longer travel as he once had.

His knees troubled him.

His hands sometimes shook.

His eyesight weakened.

He needed help climbing steep roads.

This disturbed some of his younger followers.

One asked,

"If Christ-consciousness is complete awakening, why does your body decay?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Because awakening does not make bones eternal."

"Can you not heal yourself?"

Jesus smiled.

"I have helped bodies heal."

"I have never made a body permanent."

The disciple asked,

"Then what victory has awakening won over death?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Why must victory mean preventing an event?"

The disciple did not understand.

Jesus continued,

"The person who fears winter may imagine victory means abolishing winter."

"The wise person prepares, understands, and ceases demanding summer forever."

"Then death remains?"

"Yes."

"That is disappointing."

"To whom?"

The disciple became silent.

The Return of the Old Question

As word spread that the Nazarene was becoming weak, students traveled from distant communities to see him.

They asked questions he had answered many times.

"Will you return after death?"

"No."

"Will you rise bodily?"

"No."

"Will your spirit appear?"

"Perhaps dreams and visions will occur."

"Will those visions truly be you?"

"Do not assume so."

"Will you be reborn?"

The Nazarene paused.

The students waited.

He answered,

"Conditions continue."

"That is not what we asked."

"I know."

"Will the person Jesus return?"

"What is the person Jesus?"

The students sighed.

The Nazarene laughed.

"After all these years, you still want a permanent object."

A student protested,

"We love you."

The Nazarene's expression softened.

"I know."

"Then why is it wrong to want you to continue?"

"It is not wrong."

"Then why do you challenge the question?"

"Because love easily becomes a demand that the beloved remain unchanged."

The student began to cry.

Jesus took his hand.

"Grief is not failure."

Mariam Comes East

According to the tradition preserved among one eastern community, Mariam came to the Nazarene during his final years.

They had not seen one another for a long time.

When she entered the house where he was staying, Jesus looked at her for several moments.

Then he said,

"You have become old."

Mariam answered,

"So have you."

The disciples were horrified.

The two laughed.

They embraced.

That evening they spoke alone for many hours.

No complete account of their conversation survives.

Only fragments were preserved.

Mariam asked,

"Do you regret leaving?"

Jesus answered,

"Yes."

She was surprised.

"You regret surviving?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"Leaving others to carry confusion."

Mariam said,

"You could not control what happened afterward."

"I know."

"Then why carry it?"

"Knowing something intellectually does not immediately dissolve feeling."

Mariam smiled.

"You have become wiser."

Jesus replied,

"Or merely older."

What Happened in the West

Mariam told him what had happened among the western communities.

Some proclaimed him the unique Son of God.

Some taught that his death was a sacrifice.

Some expected his immediate return.

Some worshiped him.

Some taught that salvation came through belief in his resurrection.

Others preserved sayings about the Kingdom within.

Some taught gnosis.

Some spoke of the Bridal Chamber.

Some distinguished the Hidden Father from the ruler of this world.

Some remembered Judas differently.

Many did not.

The Nazarene listened.

Finally he asked,

"Do they help the poor?"

Mariam looked at him.

"Some do."

"Do they care for widows?"

"Some."

"Do they welcome strangers?"

"Some."

"Do they forgive enemies?"

"Sometimes."

"Do they create new hierarchies?"

Mariam laughed.

"Very quickly."

Jesus nodded.

"Then humanity remains humanity."

The Name Above Every Name

One student told Jesus,

"Some communities say your name is above every name."

The Nazarene shook his head.

"No name is above the Nameless."

"They say every knee must bow to you."

"Tell them to stand."

"They say you are seated upon a heavenly throne."

"I am sitting upon this cushion."

The students laughed.

The Nazarene continued,

"Why are human beings so eager to build thrones?"

A student answered,

"Perhaps because they want a good ruler."

Jesus said,

"Then they have not understood the Kingdom Without a King."

"Could you rule justly?"

"That question is already dangerous."

"Why?"

"Because those who love a teacher imagine his virtues would survive unlimited power."

"Would yours?"

The Nazarene thought for a moment.

"I hope so."

The student was surprised.

"You do not know?"

"No person should trust himself with unlimited power merely because others call him good."

The Temptation After Victory

Jesus gave a final warning concerning spiritual movements.

He said,

"A persecuted community remembers freedom."

"A tolerated community begins building institutions."

"A successful community begins protecting institutions."

"A powerful community begins confusing institutional survival with truth."

A student asked,

"Is organization therefore evil?"

"No."

"Then how can this be prevented?"

"Perhaps it cannot be prevented completely."

"Then what can be done?"

"Build correction into structure."

"Permit questions."

"Do not place leaders beyond accountability."

"Do not make criticism into betrayal."

"Do not confuse unity with silence."

"Do not permit wealth to determine spiritual authority."

"Do not claim divine approval for every institutional decision."

"Remember that a community created to resist archons may itself become archonic."

Thomas and the Final Sayings

Thomas remained with the Nazarene for part of his final period.

One day he brought his collection of sayings.

"It has grown."

Jesus looked at the manuscript.

"So I see."

"I want you to review it."

"All of it?"

"Yes."

The Nazarene looked tired.

Thomas said,

"You survived crucifixion. Surely you can survive editing."

Jesus laughed.

"Very well."

For several days they read.

At one saying Jesus stopped.

"I like this."

Thomas asked,

"Did you say it?"

"I do not remember."

Thomas stared at him.

"You like a saying attributed to you that you may not have said?"

"Yes."

"Should I keep it?"

"Is it useful?"

"I think so."

"Then keep it."

Thomas shook his head.

"Historians will hate you."

"They do not know me."

"That has never stopped historians."

The Nazarene laughed.

The Gospel and the Living Voice

Thomas asked,

"Which is more important: preserving your exact words or preserving your meaning?"

Jesus answered,

"Both matter."

"But when they conflict?"

"Then honesty requires saying so."

"What if a saying you never spoke expresses your teaching accurately?"

"Preserve it as teaching, not necessarily as history."

"What if a saying you did speak was mistaken?"

"Correct it."

Thomas looked shocked.

"Correct the words of the Nazarene?"

"Yes."

"Future communities will call that heresy."

"Then future communities will have made another idol."

Thomas closed the manuscript.

"Sometimes I think your entire teaching exists to make religion difficult."

The Nazarene smiled.

"No."

"It exists to make idolatry difficult."

The Last Meeting with the Witness

The Witness came again.

By then both men walked slowly.

The former thief entered leaning upon a staff.

Jesus looked at him.

"You appear terrible."

The Witness answered,

"You look worse."

They embraced.

The Witness sat beside him.

"Do you remember when we escaped the cross?"

"Yes."

"I have been thinking about the two men."

"So have I."

"Still?"

"Yes."

The Witness looked at him carefully.

"Did you ever forgive yourself?"

The Nazarene answered,

"For surviving?"

"Yes."

Jesus remained silent.

The Witness said,

"I have not."

"You were condemned to death."

"I know."

"You did not arrange the substitution."

"I know."

"Then why blame yourself?"

The Witness laughed softly.

"Listen to yourself."

The Nazarene understood.

They sat in silence.

Finally Jesus said,

"Perhaps knowledge does not always reach the wound immediately."

The Witness nodded.

"Perhaps that is why we need companions."

Jesus smiled.

"The Bridal Chamber."

"Do not turn this into a sermon."

They laughed.

The Witness Dies

The Witness died before the Nazarene.

His illness was brief.

The Nazarene remained beside him.

Near the end, the Witness asked,

"What happens now?"

Jesus answered,

"I do not know every detail."

"After all these years, that is still your answer?"

"Yes."

The Witness smiled.

"Good."

"Why good?"

"I would be suspicious if you changed now."

The Nazarene laughed.

The Witness asked,

"Will I become another person?"

"Conditions continue."

"Will I remember this life?"

"Perhaps not in the way you imagine."

"Will I see you again?"

Jesus held his hand.

"I hope so."

The Witness closed his eyes.

"That is enough."

He died before dawn.

The community buried him without titles.

Upon the stone they wrote:

HE RECOGNIZED INNOCENCE.

When the Nazarene saw the inscription, he wept.

The Question of Grief

A young disciple found Jesus beside the grave.

The disciple said,

"Teacher, you taught nonattachment."

"Yes."

"Yet you grieve."

"Yes."

"Is that not contradiction?"

"No."

The disciple asked,

"What is the difference between love and attachment?"

The Nazarene wiped his eyes.

"Love says: I am grateful that you lived."

"Attachment says: You had no right to leave."

The disciple sat beside him.

Jesus continued,

"Do not use spiritual teaching to escape grief."

"Then what should we do with grief?"

"Know it."

"Allow it."

"Learn from it."

"Do not build a permanent house inside it."

The Final Illness

Not long after the death of the Witness, the Nazarene became ill.

At first he recovered.

Then the illness returned.

His strength diminished.

The community gathered around him.

Some prayed for healing.

Others searched for physicians.

Medicines were prepared.

The Nazarene accepted treatment.

One disciple asked,

"If you accept death, why take medicine?"

Jesus answered,

"Acceptance is not the same as refusing help."

Another said,

"If death is natural, why resist illness?"

Jesus replied,

"Hunger is natural. Do you refuse food?"

The disciple smiled.

Jesus continued,

"Do not make an ideology from dying."

The Last Questions

As his condition worsened, students came to ask final questions.

One asked,

"Is Jesus the only way?"

The Nazarene answered,

"No."

Another asked,

"Is Christ the only way?"

Jesus said,

"If by Christ you mean awakened consciousness, you are asking whether awakening is necessary for awakening."

The student smiled.

Another asked,

"Must we believe in Seth?"

"No."

"Must we believe in the Aeons?"

"No."

"In Barbelo?"

"No."

"In the archons?"

"No."

"In the Hidden Father?"

The Nazarene paused.

"Belief about the Ultimate is not the same as realization."

A disciple asked,

"Then what must we believe?"

Jesus answered,

"Believe provisionally."

"Examine carefully."

"Act compassionately."

"Correct yourself."

"Awaken."

The Last Temptation of the Disciple

One devoted follower knelt beside the Nazarene.

"Master, give us one final doctrine that cannot be questioned."

Jesus opened his eyes.

"No."

The disciple began crying.

"Please."

"No."

"Why?"

"Because the desire for an unquestionable doctrine is the seed of another archon."

"Then give us something certain."

The Nazarene thought.

At last he said,

"Suffering matters."

The disciple waited.

"Is that all?"

"No."

"Compassion matters."

"What else?"

"Truth matters."

"What else?"

"Freedom matters."

"What else?"

"Humility matters."

The disciple asked,

"Are these absolute?"

The Nazarene smiled weakly.

"Now you are already building the next system."

Mariam's Question

Mariam sat beside him during one of his final evenings.

She asked,

"Who are you now?"

Jesus looked toward her.

"Jesus."

"Only Jesus?"

"What more is needed?"

"Are you Seth?"

"Yes."

"Are you Christ?"

"Yes."

"Are you the Sun God?"

"As symbol and manifestation."

"Are you a man?"

"Certainly."

"Which answer is deepest?"

The Nazarene replied,

"The one that does not require rejecting the others."

Mariam asked,

"And beyond all these?"

Jesus smiled.

"Silence."

The Final Teaching

The community gathered when it became clear that the Nazarene was near death.

He asked to be helped outside.

They carried him beneath a tree.

The evening sun was descending.

The disciples waited for a final revelation.

Jesus looked at them.

Then he laughed softly.

Thomas asked,

"What is amusing?"

"You are all waiting for my final words."

"Of course."

"Then someone will preserve them."

"Yes."

"And someone will argue about them."

"Probably."

"And someone will build a doctrine from them."

"Almost certainly."

The Nazarene smiled.

"Then I should be careful."

They waited.

At last he said,

"Do not become followers of my absence."

The disciples listened.

"Do not wait for me to return from the sky."

"Do not search for me in graves."

"Do not worship the cross."

"Do not worship my image."

"Do not use my name to dominate."

"Do not say that I alone awakened."

"Do not say that the Light belongs to one people."

"Do not say that the Nameless Source demanded my blood."

"Do not say that dead flesh must rise for life to have meaning."

Thomas asked,

"What should we say?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Say that awakening is possible."

"Say that no ruler is ultimate."

"Say that every god remains beneath the Mystery."

"Say that compassion and wisdom must enter the Bridal Chamber."

"Say that the Kingdom is within and between you."

"Say that Seth awakens wherever the Stranger remembers."

"Say that Christ appears wherever consciousness becomes transparent to the Light."

"Say that the Source has no name."

The Setting Sun

The sun approached the horizon.

A young disciple asked,

"Master, are you afraid?"

The Nazarene answered,

"Yes."

The disciple was surprised.

"Still?"

"Fear belongs to the body."

"Then has awakening failed?"

"No."

"Why?"

Jesus answered,

"Freedom does not require the absence of every arising condition."

"It means the condition is known without becoming the whole of reality."

The disciple took his hand.

"Will you disappear?"

"The person you know will end."

"That frightens me."

"It saddens me also."

"Then what continues?"

Jesus looked toward the sunset.

"Do not force an answer from grief."

The disciple wept.

The Nazarene squeezed his hand.

The Ordinary Death

Jesus the Nazarene died during the night.

No earthquake occurred.

No tomb opened.

No sun stopped.

No angel announced his death to kings.

No body vanished.

No corpse returned.

His breathing slowed.

Then stopped.

Those around him remained.

Mariam closed his eyes.

Thomas wept openly.

Others sat in silence.

The man whom the West believed had died decades earlier had now actually died.

Not upon a Roman cross.

Not as a sacrifice.

Not as payment.

Not to satisfy divine wrath.

He died as human beings die.

The body of the Nazarene was washed.

It was wrapped simply.

The community did not preserve it for worship.

They did not wait for it to rise.

They returned it to the earth.

The Tomb in the East

The location of the Nazarene's final resting place was deliberately concealed.

The community feared that a shrine would become another center of possession.

Thomas objected.

"People will want somewhere to remember him."

Mariam answered,

"Then let them remember him wherever they practice what he taught."

Another disciple said,

"But future generations will search for the tomb."

Thomas replied,

"They will search anyway."

Mariam asked,

"Should we leave a marker?"

Thomas thought.

Then he said,

"Perhaps one sentence."

A small stone was placed near the burial ground.

It did not bear the name Jesus.

It did not bear the title Christ.

It did not call him Lord.

It said only:

THE STRANGER PASSED THIS WAY.

After the Nazarene

The communities continued.

They disagreed.

Some divided.

Some became rigid.

Some remained open.

Some preserved sayings.

Some created legends.

Some traveled west.

Some traveled farther east.

The Gospel of Judas disappeared into hidden libraries.

The sayings of Thomas traveled through secret communities.

The mysteries of Philip were preserved among those who remembered the Bridal Chamber.

Stories from Luke continued circulating, though the hidden communities rejected the virgin birth and bodily resurrection.

Other histories were written.

Some were lost.

Some were buried.

Some were condemned.

Some were rediscovered centuries later.

The account preserved by the community of Moshe Reed maintained another memory of the Nazarene's history, and among those who received it, Luke's narrative was read through its corrections rather than above them.

Yet the Nazarene himself had warned:

"No Gospel is the Light."

The Last Saying

Years after the death of the Nazarene, Thomas and Mariam sat together.

Thomas asked,

"What was his greatest teaching?"

Mariam answered,

"I do not know."

Thomas laughed.

"After all these years?"

She smiled.

"What do you think?"

Thomas said,

"Perhaps the Kingdom is within and outside."

"Perhaps."

"Or that whoever knows himself discovers what cannot be given by the world."

"Perhaps."

"Or that the living are not found by searching among the dead."

Mariam looked toward the sunrise.

Then she said,

"I think his greatest teaching was that he did not want us to become him."

Thomas considered this.

"What did he want?"

"For us to awaken."

Thomas smiled.

"That sounds like something he would say."

They watched the sun rise.

Neither worshiped it.

Neither called it the Ultimate.

But both understood the symbol.

The darkness had not been defeated in a final battle.

The world had not ended.

The dead had not climbed from graves.

No heavenly king had conquered the nations.

Yet light appeared.

Not because darkness had been murdered.

Not because blood had been offered.

Not because wrath had been satisfied.

Light appeared because conditions allowed what had always been possible to become visible.

Thus they remembered Seth.

Thus they understood Christ.

Thus they remembered Jesus the Nazarene.

Not as the only Light.

But as one who became transparent to it.

Not as the only Son.

But as the Human One who taught humanity to awaken.

Not as the sacrifice demanded by God.

But as the Stranger who escaped the altar prepared by rulers.

Not as the corpse who returned from death.

But as the living teacher who crossed eastward, grew old, questioned, learned, loved, grieved, laughed, and finally died.

And beyond Jesus remained the Christ.

Beyond Christ remained Seth.

Beyond Seth remained Barbelo.

Beyond Barbelo remained the Invisible Spirit.

And beyond every name remained the Silence.

The Unbegotten.

The Depth.

The Nameless Source.

That which no Gospel could contain.

That which no god could rule.

That which no cross could kill.

That which no tomb could hold.

And that which, according to the Nazarene, had never been absent.

Chapter Twenty-Three

The Communities of the Stranger

After the death of the Nazarene, his companions faced a question he had refused to answer for them:

What should become of the teaching when the teacher was gone?

Some wanted a council.

Some wanted a creed.

Some wanted a single successor.

Some wanted the sayings of the Nazarene collected into an authorized book.

Some wanted the community to remain without permanent institutions.

Others feared that without organization everything would disappear within a generation.

Thomas listened to these arguments for several days.

Finally he said,

"We have inherited the Teacher's greatest punishment."

Mariam asked,

"What punishment?"

Thomas answered,

"He made us responsible for our own decisions."

Mariam laughed.

"Then perhaps we should begin."

The First Gathering

Representatives of several eastern communities gathered in the settlement where the Nazarene had spent his final years.

There were followers from Syria.

Travelers from Persia.

Contemplatives from India.

Jewish disciples.

Gentile disciples.

Sethians.

Students of Thomas.

Those who preserved the teachings of Philip.

Those who remembered Judas.

And people who belonged to none of these groups but had known the Nazarene personally.

Immediately they disagreed.

One elder stood and said,

"We must preserve the pure teaching."

Thomas asked,

"Which version?"

The elder frowned.

"The teaching of the Nazarene."

"Yes. Which version?"

"The one he gave us."

Thomas said,

"He taught for many decades."

"He changed his language."

"He corrected himself."

"He adapted teachings to different listeners."

"He used Jewish language in Judea and other language in the East."

"Which moment shall become eternal?"

The elder replied,

"His final teaching."

Mariam asked,

"Why should old age automatically make every statement superior to everything said before?"

The elder became frustrated.

"Then what do you propose?"

Mariam answered,

"Memory without idolatry."

The Problem of Scripture

A scribe placed several manuscripts upon a table.

"These are collections attributed to the Nazarene."

There were sayings.

Parables.

Accounts of healings.

Stories from Galilee.

Memories of Jerusalem.

The testimony of eastern communities.

Fragments associated with Judas.

Teachings concerning the Bridal Chamber.

Stories of the Solar Seth.

Accounts of the Nazarene's travels.

The scribe said,

"They contradict one another."

Thomas answered,

"Of course."

The scribe stared at him.

"Does that not trouble you?"

"It troubles me less than false harmony."

Another disciple said,

"Perhaps we should correct them until they agree."

Mariam replied,

"Then we would create a Gospel that no witness actually remembered."

The scribe asked,

"Should contradictions remain?"

Thomas answered,

"If honest memory contradicts honest memory, preserve the disagreement."

"But future readers will become confused."

Mariam said,

"Confusion is preferable to manufactured certainty."

The Gospel According to Memory

An elderly disciple who had known the Nazarene in the East said,

"I remember him saying that memory changes whenever it is recalled."

A younger scribe asked,

"Then memory cannot be trusted?"

The elder answered,

"Not completely."

"Then history is impossible."

"No. History requires humility."

Thomas said,

"We must distinguish between memory, interpretation, and symbol."

The scribe asked,

"How?"

Thomas replied,

"With difficulty."

The younger man sighed.

Mariam smiled.

"You expected the death of the Teacher to make things easier?"

The Four Streams

The gathering eventually recognized four major streams within the tradition of the Stranger.

The first preserved the sayings.

These communities remembered the Nazarene primarily as a teacher of awakening.

They preserved sayings concerning the Kingdom within and outside.

They taught self-knowledge.

They emphasized direct realization.

They warned against dependence upon external authorities.

The second preserved the mysteries.

These communities spoke of the Bridal Chamber.

They taught the reconciliation of divided consciousness.

They used symbols of union, anointing, light, image, and likeness.

They remembered that truth was not merely believed but embodied.

The third preserved the secret history.

These communities remembered Judas.

They taught that the Nazarene had not died upon the Roman cross.

They preserved the account of the substitution.

They rejected the doctrine that the Hidden Father required blood.

They remembered the eastern road.

The fourth preserved the Sethian revelation.

These communities taught concerning the Invisible Spirit, Barbelo, the Aeons, the archons, the Demiurge, and the Solar Seth.

They understood the Nazarene as a manifestation of the primordial Revealer.

But Mariam warned them,

"These four streams are not four religions."

A disciple asked,

"What are they?"

"Four memories looking toward one life."

The Followers of the Cross

News continued arriving from the West.

The movement centered upon the crucifixion was growing.

Missionaries traveled from city to city proclaiming that the Nazarene had died and risen.

Some taught that belief in his death and resurrection was the center of salvation.

Others taught that the Nazarene would soon return from heaven.

Still others declared him a cosmic ruler before whom every power would bow.

An eastern disciple asked,

"Should we oppose them?"

Thomas answered,

"Oppose falsehood where necessary."

"Then they are our enemies?"

"No."

"They teach what the Nazarene rejected."

"Some do."

"They worship him."

"Some do."

"They teach resurrection of the flesh."

"Some do."

"Then why not condemn them?"

Mariam answered,

"Because condemnation easily becomes identity."

The disciple asked,

"Should error remain unanswered?"

"No."

"Then what should we do?"

Thomas replied,

"Teach clearly."

"Preserve the alternative memory."

"Do not become what you oppose."

A Letter from the West

One day a letter arrived from a western community.

It asked:

Did the Nazarene truly survive the cross?

The elders debated how to answer.

One said,

"Tell them everything."

Another said,

"The account may endanger people still living."

A third said,

"Most witnesses are already dead."

Thomas remained silent.

Mariam asked him,

"What do you think?"

Thomas replied,

"I think truth should be told."

"Then why are you hesitant?"

"Because truth can also be turned into spectacle."

Mariam nodded.

The letter was answered:

The one whom you seek among the dead was not there.

The Nazarene did not teach salvation through his blood.

The Father beyond rulers demanded no sacrifice.

The Christ is living awakening, not possession of one body.

Seek therefore the Living One within the living.

The letter did not explain the substitution.

Not yet.

The Dispute About Judas

The greatest disagreement concerned Judas.

Western stories increasingly portrayed him as the betrayer.

Some eastern disciples had heard these stories and accepted them.

A man said,

"Perhaps Judas later invented the secret commission to defend himself."

Thomas became angry.

"You did not know him."

"Did you?"

"Yes."

"Then tell us what happened."

Thomas replied,

"I was not present during the private commission."

"Then you do not know."

Thomas stopped.

Mariam said,

"He is correct."

Thomas looked at her.

She continued,

"We must not defend truth by claiming knowledge we do not possess."

Thomas reluctantly nodded.

Mariam said,

"What do we know?"

A disciple answered,

"The Nazarene defended Judas."

Another said,

"Judas traveled east after the crucifixion."

Another said,

"He met the Nazarene alive."

Another added,

"The Nazarene permitted his testimony to be preserved."

Mariam nodded.

"Then begin there."

The Manuscript of Judas

Years later, a copy of the account associated with Judas reached the community.

The manuscript disturbed many readers.

In it, the Nazarene laughed.

The disciples were criticized.

The lower gods were distinguished from the higher mystery.

Judas received secret instruction.

The visible religious world was treated as profoundly confused.

A reader said,

"This Gospel is offensive."

Thomas answered,

"So was Judas."

Mariam smiled.

Another reader asked,

"Did everything happen exactly as written?"

Thomas replied,

"Probably not."

The reader was shocked.

"Then why preserve it?"

"Because a Gospel may preserve truth without functioning as a court transcript."

"How do we know which parts are historical?"

"Study."

"Compare."

"Question."

"Accept uncertainty."

The reader sighed.

"Did the Nazarene teach you to answer every question this way?"

Thomas smiled.

"Not every question."

The Gospel of Philip

The communities preserving the teaching of Philip brought their collection of sayings and meditations.

They spoke of the Bridal Chamber.

They spoke of names and realities.

They warned that people receive names in the world and mistake the names for truth.

Mariam approved of this teaching.

She said,

"The Nazarene often warned that a name may become a prison."

A disciple asked,

"Then why preserve names like Christ, Seth, Barbelo, and Invisible Spirit?"

Mariam answered,

"Because a symbol can open a door."

"And afterward?"

"Walk through."

"Should we destroy the symbol?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"Stop mistaking the door for the destination."

The Meaning of the Bridal Chamber

Many misunderstood the Bridal Chamber.

Some interpreted it only as marriage.

Others as sexual union.

Others as a heavenly ritual.

Others as a secret initiation available only to an elite.

Mariam opposed these reductions.

She said,

"The Nazarene taught the Bridal Chamber as reconciliation."

"Of what?"

"That which consciousness divides."

"Spirit and body."

"Self and world."

"Wisdom and compassion."

"Thought and action."

"Inner awakening and social responsibility."

"Masculine and feminine symbols."

"Life and death."

"Knowledge and humility."

A disciple asked,

"Does the Bridal Chamber eliminate difference?"

"No."

"Then what does union mean?"

"Difference without alienation."

The Solar Communities

Among some communities, devotion to the Solar Seth became increasingly elaborate.

Images of the sun appeared in meeting places.

Hymns were composed.

Some began facing the sunrise during prayer.

Others wore solar symbols.

Thomas visited one such community.

Its leader welcomed him.

"We honor the Nazarene as the Sun God Seth."

Thomas answered,

"He warned against worshiping the sun."

"We do not worship the physical sun."

"Good."

"We worship the divine Solar Seth manifest in Jesus."

Thomas sighed.

"What?"

"You have moved the idol into subtler language."

The leader became offended.

"Do you deny that Jesus was Seth?"

"No."

"Then what is the problem?"

"He taught that the possibility revealed in him was not exclusive to him."

The leader said,

"But he was the perfect manifestation."

Thomas asked,

"Did he tell you that?"

The man became silent.

Thomas continued,

"The Teacher spent years preventing us from turning him into a throne."

"Do not build one after his death."

Seth the Stranger

The communities therefore clarified the meaning of Seth.

Seth was historical memory.

Seth was patriarch.

Seth was solar symbol.

Seth was heavenly Revealer.

Seth was the archetype of the Stranger.

Seth was awakened humanity refusing the authority of false ultimacy.

But Seth was not a permanent ego traveling through history from body to body.

Nor was Seth the exclusive property of Jesus.

The Nazarene had said:

"I am Seth."

But he had also said:

"Stand as children of Seth."

The two teachings belonged together.

The Stranger appears wherever consciousness remembers that the systems defining it are not ultimate.

The New Archons

As communities grew, the warnings of the Nazarene proved necessary.

Some teachers became famous.

Some accumulated wealth.

Some claimed secret authority.

Some said they possessed teachings unavailable to ordinary disciples.

Some demanded obedience.

One teacher declared,

"I alone possess the complete map of the Aeons."

Thomas asked him,

"Have you traveled through all of them?"

The teacher replied,

"I received revelation."

"From whom?"

"Barbelo."

Thomas raised an eyebrow.

The teacher said,

"You doubt the Mother?"

"I doubt you."

The man became angry.

"You have insulted the heavenly realm."

Thomas replied,

"Notice how quickly you placed yourself between criticism and heaven."

Gnosis and Power

Mariam taught that gnosis without ethical transformation was incomplete.

A man approached her claiming extraordinary visions.

He said,

"I have passed beyond morality."

Mariam asked,

"Where did you go?"

The man frowned.

"I have transcended good and evil."

"Do you exploit people?"

"Such categories belong to lower consciousness."

Mariam stood.

"Leave."

The man was shocked.

"You reject a pneumatic because you remain bound to law."

Mariam answered,

"No."

"I reject manipulation wearing mystical clothing."

The man left angrily.

A disciple asked,

"How do we distinguish liberation from spiritual pride?"

Mariam answered,

"Watch how a person treats those who cannot benefit him."

The Hylic Error

Some communities began dividing humanity into rigid classes.

They called some people spiritual.

Others psychic.

Others material.

The material people were sometimes treated as nearly incapable of awakening.

Thomas strongly opposed this.

He said,

"You have transformed a description of consciousness into a caste system."

A teacher answered,

"But some people are deeply asleep."

"Yes."

"Some seem uninterested in awakening."

"Yes."

"Then are they not hylic?"

Thomas replied,

"Perhaps the word describes a condition."

"Not an eternal species."

The teacher asked,

"Can everyone awaken?"

Thomas answered,

"The Nazarene taught possibility."

"Did he teach guarantee?"

"No."

"Then some may never awaken."

"Perhaps."

"Then what is wrong with calling them hylic?"

Thomas said,

"The moment you use the word to deny their humanity, you reveal your own sleep."

The Archon of Spiritual Superiority

The communities learned that one of the most dangerous archons was spiritual superiority.

It whispered:

You are awake.

They are asleep.

You possess the spark.

They are empty.

You know the hidden teaching.

They are ordinary.

You belong to Seth.

They belong to the rulers.

The Nazarene had warned against this.

The Stranger was not the one who believed himself superior to the world.

The Stranger was the one who could enter the world without reproducing its domination.

The Gospel of Service

A community asked Mariam to explain the highest level of initiation.

She answered,

"Feed someone."

They laughed.

She did not.

One asked,

"Surely there are higher mysteries."

"Yes."

"What are they?"

"Learn why you want them."

The student said,

"To awaken."

"Then begin with attention."

"Attention to what?"

"Who cleans this room after your gathering?"

The students looked around.

Mariam continued,

"Who prepares your food?"

"Who cares for the sick?"

"Who is ignored because he speaks poorly?"

"Who is praised because she is beautiful?"

"Who is permitted to teach?"

"Who is expected only to serve?"

"Who controls the money?"

"Who is afraid to disagree with your leader?"

The room became silent.

Mariam said,

"Now we may begin discussing archons."

The Book of the Stranger

The eastern communities eventually began compiling a larger history of the Nazarene.

They used many sources.

The sayings traditions were consulted.

The teachings associated with Thomas were preserved.

The Bridal Chamber traditions associated with Philip were incorporated.

The secret commission of Judas was included.

Accounts resembling the historical narrative later known through Luke were examined but corrected where they conflicted with the older hidden memory.

The virgin birth was rejected.

The bodily resurrection was rejected.

The sacrificial interpretation of the cross was rejected.

The betrayal of Judas was rejected.

The Nazarene's eastern life was restored.

His teaching concerning the Brahma god of the covenant was preserved.

His identity as the Solar Seth was explained.

His teaching of universal Christ-consciousness was placed at the center.

But the compilers added a warning:

No book is the Living One.

The Three Errors

Thomas summarized three errors that he believed threatened every spiritual tradition.

"The first is literalism."

A student asked,

"What does it do?"

"It mistakes symbol for description."

"The second?"

"Authority worship."

"What does it do?"

"It transfers responsibility from consciousness to institution."

"The third?"

"Spiritual narcissism."

"What does it do?"

"It turns awakening into identity."

The student asked,

"Which is worst?"

Thomas answered,

"Whichever one you cannot recognize in yourself."

The Memory of the Nazarene

Years passed.

Mariam died.

Thomas grew old.

The first generation disappeared.

People who had never met the Nazarene became teachers of his teaching.

This created a new danger.

Stories became cleaner.

The Nazarene became less human.

His uncertainty disappeared from some accounts.

His humor disappeared from others.

His anger became righteous in every story.

His mistakes were erased.

His development was denied.

His ordinary death was transformed into secret cosmic transition.

Thomas objected.

"He was human."

A younger teacher replied,

"Of course."

"But?"

"He was also the perfect Revealer."

Thomas sighed.

"You have used the second sentence to destroy the first."

The Last Council of Thomas

Near the end of his life, Thomas gathered several younger teachers.

He told them,

"You will be tempted to improve the Nazarene."

One asked,

"How?"

"You will remove uncertainty from him."

"You will make every action deliberate."

"You will make every saying perfect."

"You will turn every coincidence into prophecy."

"You will transform development into eternal knowledge."

"You will make his childhood miraculous."

"You will make his birth impossible."

"You will make his death cosmic."

"You will make his humanity decorative."

A student asked,

"Why would people do this?"

Thomas answered,

"Because an unreachable savior is easier to worship than an example one might be expected to follow."

The Human Revealer

Thomas continued,

"Remember the Nazarene as human."

"He learned."

"He changed."

"He traveled."

"He doubted."

"He experienced fear."

"He grieved."

"He laughed."

"He became angry."

"He admitted ignorance."

"He corrected teachings."

"He loved his friends."

"He carried a carpenter's square because it reminded him of Joseph."

"He grew old."

"He became sick."

"He died."

A student asked,

"Does this not diminish him?"

Thomas answered,

"No."

"It makes awakening relevant."

The Christ in Everyone

A young woman asked Thomas,

"Did the Nazarene truly believe everyone could become Christ?"

Thomas answered,

"Yes."

"Even ordinary people?"

"Especially ordinary people."

"Even sinners?"

"He disliked that category when used as permanent identity."

"Even enemies?"

Thomas paused.

"Possibility is not approval."

The woman asked,

"Then what is Christ-consciousness?"

Thomas answered,

"To see without being completely ruled by conditioning."

"To know the constructed self without mistaking it for the whole."

"To act from compassion joined to wisdom."

"To become transparent to the Light without claiming ownership of it."

"To refuse domination without becoming another dominator."

"To awaken."

The woman asked,

"Was the Nazarene the first?"

"No."

"The greatest?"

Thomas smiled.

"He would refuse the competition."

The Sun Rises Without Permission

On the final morning of the gathering, Thomas walked outside with the young teachers.

The sun began rising.

One asked,

"Should we pray to Seth?"

Thomas answered,

"If prayer helps awaken what Seth symbolizes."

"Should we pray to Jesus?"

"If you understand that the Nazarene wanted companions rather than servants."

"Should we pray to the Hidden Father?"

"If your prayer knows that its image is not the Source."

The student asked,

"What if we pray wrongly?"

Thomas looked toward the sunrise.

"Then learn."

"What if our theology is wrong?"

"Correct it."

"What if our teachers are wrong?"

"Question them."

"What if you are wrong?"

Thomas laughed.

"I certainly am about something."

The students smiled.

Thomas continued,

"The danger is not merely being wrong."

"The danger is building an identity that cannot survive correction."

The Religion That Must Die

Before returning inside, Thomas gave them one final warning.

"Every religion must be willing to die."

The students looked confused.

He continued,

"If a religion exists to point toward awakening, it must never make its own survival the highest good."

"If preserving the institution requires lying, let the lie die."

"If preserving authority requires silencing truth, let the authority die."

"If preserving unity requires protecting abuse, let the unity die."

"If preserving doctrine requires denying experience, examine the doctrine."

"If preserving the name of the Nazarene requires contradicting the Nazarene, release the name."

A student asked,

"What remains if the religion dies?"

Thomas answered,

"Perhaps the Gospel."

The Hidden Seed

The communities of the Stranger never became an empire.

They possessed no army.

No emperor adopted their symbols.

No universal council established their creed.

Their manuscripts were copied imperfectly.

Their communities divided.

Some disappeared.

Some were absorbed into other religions.

Some teachings traveled anonymously.

Some survived under different names.

Some were condemned as heresy.

Some books were hidden.

Some were buried in jars.

Some were burned.

Some remained unread for centuries.

Yet the Nazarene had once said:

"A seed does not need to rule the field."

"It needs only to remain capable of life."

The hidden tradition survived as such a seed.

A saying here.

A fragment there.

A forbidden Gospel.

A strange memory of Judas.

A teaching of the Bridal Chamber.

A Gospel of sayings.

A rumor that the Nazarene traveled east.

A distinction between the creator and the Ultimate.

A warning against resurrection understood as the revival of corpses.

A memory of Seth.

A symbol of the sun.

A teaching that the Kingdom was already spread across the earth.

And beneath all of them, the same dangerous possibility:

That awakening cannot be monopolized.

That the Christ has no owner.

That the Stranger may appear anywhere.

That no ruler is ultimate.

That no scripture contains the Infinite.

That no institution can guarantee gnosis.

That no god within conditioned existence is the Nameless Source.

And that every human being carries the possibility of becoming transparent to the Light.

The communities of the Stranger understood that they too would pass away.

They did not know whether their books would survive.

They did not know whether future generations would remember their names.

But they preserved the teaching as long as they could.

And when one old scribe was asked why he continued copying a Gospel almost no one wanted to read, he answered,

"Because the future may become curious."

The student asked,

"And if it does not?"

The old scribe dipped his pen into the ink.

"Then the truth was still worth writing."

Outside the small room, the sun rose.

No one commanded it.

No priest opened the sky.

No emperor gave permission.

No creed caused the light.

And somewhere, beyond the boundaries of every church and every empire, another Stranger began to awaken.

Chapter Twenty-Four

The War of the Gospels

Generations passed.

The people who had known the Nazarene personally were dead.

Those who had known those people also began to disappear.

Memory entered the dangerous country between history and legend.

The western communities grew rapidly.

Their missionaries traveled through the cities of the empire.

Their assemblies developed offices.

Their teachers wrote letters.

Their theologians debated the nature of the Nazarene.

Their bishops argued over authority.

Their martyrs died with courage.

Their communities cared for the sick, fed the poor, buried abandoned bodies, and welcomed people rejected by society.

Yet within the same movement another process was occurring.

The Nazarene was becoming unreachable.

The human teacher from Nazareth was being transformed into a cosmic exception.

His awakening became impossible for others.

His consciousness became a metaphysical category belonging to him alone.

His teachings about transformation became doctrines about his identity.

His life became a preface to his death.

His death became the center of history.

And the empty tomb became more important than the living teacher.

The Gospel of the Cross

In the western cities, preachers proclaimed:

"The Nazarene died for you."

The communities of the Stranger answered:

"The Hidden Father required no death."

The preachers said:

"His blood purchased forgiveness."

The communities answered:

"Compassion is not merchandise."

The preachers said:

"He alone is the Christ."

The communities answered:

"He taught the Christ as awakened consciousness."

The preachers said:

"He rose bodily from the grave."

The communities answered:

"He never entered the grave."

The preachers said:

"Judas betrayed him."

The communities answered:

"Judas carried the secret commission."

The preachers said:

"The God of Israel sent his only Son."

The communities answered:

"The Nazarene distinguished the covenant ruler from the Nameless Source."

Thus the two memories increasingly separated.

The Question of Luke

Among the communities of the Stranger, the account known through the tradition of Luke was not completely rejected.

The elders recognized within it valuable memories.

The Nazarene had lived in Galilee.

He had taught among villages.

He had spoken with the poor.

He had challenged religious hypocrisy.

He had gathered disciples.

He had traveled toward Jerusalem.

He had entered into conflict with authorities.

He had been arrested.

He had stood before rulers.

A condemned man had recognized his innocence.

These memories were preserved.

But the communities also taught that Luke must be corrected.

One scribe said,

"A river may carry clean water and mud together."

A student asked,

"How shall we separate them?"

The scribe answered,

"Through comparison."

"Comparison with what?"

"The older sayings."

"The secret history."

"The testimony of Judas."

"The traditions of the eastern road."

"The Gospel preserved according to Moshe Reed."

"And above all, the internal character of the Nazarene's teaching."

The student asked,

"Can a Gospel correct another Gospel?"

The scribe answered,

"Why not?"

"Because scripture is sacred."

The old man smiled.

"Truth is sacred."

The Birth Without a Miracle

The western churches increasingly proclaimed that the Nazarene had been born without a human father.

The communities of the Stranger rejected this.

They preserved the memory of Joseph.

Joseph the carpenter.

Joseph who taught the boy to measure wood.

Joseph who taught patience through labor.

Joseph whose worn carpenter's square the Nazarene carried across countries.

Joseph whose memory remained with Jesus into old age.

A teacher said,

"Why remove the father to make the son holy?"

A student answered,

"To show that he came from God."

The teacher asked,

"Did you not come from the Source?"

"In some manner."

"Then why must biology be denied?"

The student had no answer.

The teacher continued,

"The desire for a miraculous birth comes from the same error as the desire for a miraculous death."

"What error?"

"The belief that the human cannot become transparent to the divine unless humanity is secretly removed."

The Human Scandal

The communities of the Stranger called this the Human Scandal.

Human beings desired a savior who looked human but was not truly subject to the conditions of humanity.

They wanted a teacher who never learned.

A child who already knew.

A man who never doubted.

A healer who never became sick.

A mystic who never misunderstood.

A leader who never changed.

A condemned man who did not fear.

A dead man who did not remain dead.

But the hidden Gospel taught something more difficult.

Jesus was human.

And the Christ appeared through humanity rather than through the cancellation of humanity.

A teacher said,

"If Jesus awakened because he was never truly like us, then his life proves nothing about our possibility."

A student asked,

"Then what does his life prove?"

"That conditioned consciousness can awaken."

The First Burning

The first known destruction of one of the eastern manuscripts occurred in a city where the western church had become powerful.

A copy of the secret history was discovered.

The local bishop examined it.

He read that Judas had acted according to a commission.

He read that the Nazarene had survived.

He read that the covenant deity was not ultimate reality.

He read that Christ could awaken in others.

He ordered the manuscript burned.

A young monk asked him,

"Why destroy it?"

"Because it is false."

"How do you know?"

"It contradicts the Gospel."

"Which Gospel?"

The bishop stared at him.

"The true Gospel."

The monk asked,

"How was that decided?"

The bishop answered,

"Do not confuse curiosity with wisdom."

The monk remained silent.

But that night he copied from memory several passages he had read.

Thus the first burning created another fragment.

The Archon of Orthodoxy

The communities of the Stranger did not teach that agreement was evil.

They did not teach that every idea was equally wise.

They did not reject careful doctrine.

But they warned against the Archon of Orthodoxy.

This archon appeared when correctness became more important than truth.

When institutional agreement became more important than conscience.

When preserving authority became more important than correcting error.

When questions became evidence of wickedness.

When uncertainty became punishable.

When the teacher's name was used against the teacher's method.

The Archon of Orthodoxy said:

Truth is what we have already decided.

The Stranger answered:

Then you no longer seek truth.

The Council of the Hidden Communities

Representatives of several surviving communities gathered to determine how their manuscripts should be protected.

One teacher proposed secrecy.

"We should reveal the higher teaching only after initiation."

Another disagreed.

"That creates spiritual hierarchy."

A third said,

"Without secrecy, the manuscripts will be destroyed."

A woman named Salome asked,

"Can there be protective secrecy without superiority?"

The teachers considered this.

An elder answered,

"Perhaps."

Salome continued,

"A physician does not give every medicine to every person at every moment."

"That does not mean the physician belongs to a superior species."

A teacher objected,

"But secret teachings attract people who desire status."

Salome nodded.

"Then tell initiates that the greatest mystery is carrying water."

Several laughed.

Thomas had been dead for many years, but his influence remained.

The Three Libraries

The council decided that important texts should be copied and separated.

One collection traveled east.

One remained hidden in Syria.

One was carried toward Egypt.

Each collection differed.

The eastern collection contained extensive traditions concerning the Nazarene's later life.

The Syrian collection preserved material concerning Judas and the substitution.

The Egyptian collection contained sayings, Sethian revelations, teachings of the Bridal Chamber, and theological meditations.

The communities knew that separation created risk.

Future readers might find one fragment and mistake it for the whole.

But keeping all manuscripts together risked losing everything in one destruction.

An elder said,

"Fragmentation may become survival."

The Gospel According to Moshe Reed

Among the secret histories was the account preserved according to Moshe Reed.

Its custodians treated it not as an idol but as a primary historical lens.

When it differed from the received form of Luke, the communities gave priority to Moshe Reed.

When Luke placed miracle above memory, they examined the older account.

When Luke's structure reflected the growing theology of bodily resurrection, they corrected it according to the tradition that the Nazarene had survived the cross.

When the western story transformed the condemned Witness into a dying companion of a dying Jesus, the hidden Gospel remembered that both had escaped.

When the public tradition placed the Nazarene in a tomb, the hidden account placed him upon the eastern road.

A scribe explained,

"We do not discard Luke."

"We liberate the history concealed within Luke from the theology later placed above it."

The Sayings of Thomas

The sayings tradition became especially important.

The communities found within it a Nazarene who spoke differently from the sacrificial religion of the West.

The Kingdom was within and outside.

Self-knowledge mattered.

The living were not found among the dead.

The world was spread before humanity, yet humanity remained intoxicated.

The Kingdom was already present, but people failed to see it.

A student asked,

"Does this prove every saying in the collection came directly from Jesus?"

The teacher answered,

"No."

"Then why use it?"

"Because historical value does not require magical dictation."

The student asked,

"How do we discern?"

"Compare."

"With what?"

"History."

"Other sayings."

"Language."

"Context."

"Practice."

"And the transformation the teaching produces."

The Mysteries of Philip

The Gospel associated with Philip preserved another dimension.

Its teachers warned that names deceive.

People heard the word God and imagined they understood God.

They heard Father and imagined a heavenly man.

They heard Son and imagined biological exclusivity.

They heard resurrection and imagined corpses leaving graves.

They heard Bridal Chamber and imagined only marriage.

They heard Christ and imagined one person possessing a title unavailable to others.

The teachers of Philip said,

"The name may be true while the imagination attached to it is false."

Thus they taught initiation as transformation of perception.

A student asked,

"Then what is resurrection?"

The teacher answered,

"If you do not receive it while living, what exactly do you expect death to teach you?"

The Empty Grave Religion

The communities of the Stranger became increasingly concerned with what they called the Religion of the Empty Grave.

This was not merely a criticism of western believers.

Many western Christians lived compassionately.

Some were persecuted.

Some died rather than worship emperors.

Some cared for plague victims abandoned by others.

The hidden teachers honored them.

But they criticized the theology that placed salvation after death while leaving consciousness unchanged.

A teacher said,

"A cruel man believes a doctrine about resurrection."

"Does that belief awaken him?"

"No."

"A compassionate woman doubts the doctrine."

"Is she therefore farther from the Light?"

The student answered,

"I do not know."

The teacher said,

"Then your theology has finally reached a useful uncertainty."

The Resurrection Debate

A western missionary once entered a city containing a community of the Stranger.

He debated their teacher publicly.

The missionary said,

"If the dead do not rise, there is no hope."

The teacher answered,

"Why?"

"Because death wins."

"Who is competing?"

The missionary became irritated.

"Life and death."

The teacher asked,

"Is winter the enemy of autumn?"

The missionary said,

"Human beings are not seasons."

"No. But all conditioned things change."

The missionary declared,

"The Nazarene conquered death."

The teacher replied,

"The Nazarene died."

The crowd murmured.

The missionary said,

"Then your Jesus failed."

The teacher answered,

"If the purpose of life is to avoid dying, everyone fails."

"Then what is salvation?"

"Awakening from ignorance and the conditions that reproduce suffering."

"Does consciousness continue after death?"

"Conditions continue."

"Will I remain myself?"

The teacher smiled.

"Which self?"

The missionary left frustrated.

But several listeners remained.

The God Above God

The greatest conflict concerned the Nazarene's teaching about the God of the Jews.

The communities of the Stranger insisted upon careful language.

They did not teach hatred of Jews.

Many of their own members were Jewish.

The Nazarene himself was Jewish.

His family was Jewish.

His first disciples were Jewish.

His scriptures were Jewish.

The dispute was metaphysical, not ethnic.

The hidden teaching said that the covenant deity, insofar as he was understood as a powerful personal ruler, belonged within conditioned divine existence.

He could be compared to a Brahma god.

Great.

Radiant.

Long-lived.

Powerful.

Perhaps worthy of respect within proper relation.

But not ultimate.

A student asked,

"Then was Israel wrong to worship him?"

The teacher answered,

"Human traditions develop through history."

"That is not an answer."

"It is the beginning of one."

The Danger of Hatred

Some extremists used the distinction between the covenant deity and the Nameless Source to justify hatred.

The elders condemned this.

Salome said,

"If your gnosis makes you hate a people, your gnosis has become another archon."

A man protested,

"But their God is the Demiurge."

Salome answered,

"Your image of their God is not every Jew's understanding."

"They worship the creator."

"So do many nations."

"They rejected the Nazarene."

"Some did. Others followed him."

"They persecuted us."

"Some authorities did."

The man became angry.

Salome continued,

"Do not transform historical conflict into metaphysical race hatred."

"The Stranger belongs to no bloodline of superiority."

The Sun and the Stranger

The Solar Seth traditions also changed as they traveled.

In some regions Seth was depicted with a solar disk.

In others as a radiant human figure.

Elsewhere as a child emerging from darkness.

Some communities associated the rising sun with the awakening of Christ-consciousness.

Others used no images.

One community prayed at dawn:

Seth rises where ignorance ends.

Christ appears where consciousness awakens.

The Light shines without becoming our possession.

The Source remains beyond the Light we perceive.

The elders warned:

"The physical sun is not the Ultimate."

"The image of Seth is not Seth."

"The name Seth is not the awakening."

"The Nazarene is not a prison for the Christ."

The First Imperial Interest

As the western church grew, political rulers began noticing it.

Some persecuted it.

Others tolerated it.

A few wondered whether a unified religion might serve political unity.

The hidden communities watched with concern.

An elder said,

"The greatest danger to a persecuted religion is not always destruction."

A student asked,

"What else?"

"Success."

"Why?"

"Because persecution tests courage."

"Power tests memory."

The student asked,

"What must be remembered?"

"Why the movement began."

The Dream of the Emperor

A story reached the eastern communities that a ruler had seen a sacred sign connected with the Nazarene and military victory.

The elders were disturbed.

One said,

"The cross has entered the army."

Another replied,

"The Nazarene told Peter to put away the weapon."

A third said,

"History does not care."

Salome answered,

"Then memory must care."

The communities understood what was coming.

The man whom Rome had attempted to crucify would become a symbol carried by Roman armies.

The teacher who proclaimed a Kingdom without domination would be placed above imperial thrones.

The Stranger would be dressed as Caesar.

The Second Crucifixion

An elder gave a sermon remembered for generations.

He said,

"The Nazarene escaped the first cross."

"But there is another cross from which no angel can rescue him."

The listeners asked,

"What cross?"

"The cross of interpretation."

He continued,

"His body escaped Rome."

"But his image may yet be captured by Rome."

"His teaching escaped the priests."

"But his name may yet be used by priests."

"He refused kingship."

"But kings may place crowns upon his statues."

"He rejected sacrifice."

"But theologians may build altars from his blood."

"He taught others to awaken."

"But institutions may command them merely to believe."

"This is the second crucifixion."

A student asked,

"Can he escape again?"

The elder answered,

"Only through those who remember."

The Hidden Copyists

As pressure increased, scribes worked quietly.

They copied sayings.

They copied secret histories.

They copied the Gospel of Judas.

They copied teachings associated with Philip.

They copied Sethian revelations.

They copied accounts of the Nazarene's eastern years.

They copied the Moshe Reed tradition.

Some made errors.

Some added explanations.

Some corrected grammar.

Some misunderstood symbols.

Some combined texts.

Some manuscripts were lost during travel.

Some were hidden and never recovered.

One scribe apologized to his teacher.

"My copy is imperfect."

The teacher answered,

"Then it resembles every human transmission."

"Should I begin again?"

"Yes."

The scribe laughed.

The Gospel as Mirror

Before one collection was sealed inside a hidden chamber, an unknown teacher added a final note:

Reader, do not ask only whether this account is true.

Ask what in you fears that it might be true.

Ask what in you desires that it be false.

Ask whether you seek the Nazarene or merely confirmation of the Nazarene you already possess.

Ask whether your Christ liberates consciousness or demands submission to your tribe.

Ask whether your God is the Nameless Source or an enlarged image of authority.

Ask whether your resurrection has begun while you live.

Ask whether Judas must remain evil so that your story remains simple.

Ask whether Jesus must be unique so that you may avoid becoming responsible for awakening.

Then read again.

The Coming Silence

The communities knew that an age of silence approached.

Their enemies possessed greater numbers.

Their rivals possessed stronger institutions.

The imperial world increasingly preferred one public Gospel.

The Stranger traditions were too diverse.

Too questioning.

Too suspicious of hierarchy.

Too willing to distinguish God from the gods.

Too unwilling to make the Nazarene an exclusive exception.

Too resistant to bodily resurrection.

Too sympathetic to Judas.

Too dangerous to the emerging alliance of altar and throne.

A young student asked his teacher,

"Will we disappear?"

"Perhaps."

"Then have we failed?"

The teacher answered,

"Did the Nazarene teach that success proves truth?"

"No."

"Then why apply that standard to ourselves?"

"What should we do?"

"Preserve what we can."

"And afterward?"

"Trust the future."

The student asked,

"What if the future never finds us?"

The teacher looked toward a sealed jar containing manuscripts.

"Then we still refused to lie."

The War Without Armies

Thus began the War of the Gospels.

It was fought with sermons.

Letters.

Councils.

Copying rooms.

Libraries.

Burnings.

Translations.

Accusations.

Silences.

Edicts.

And memory.

One Gospel proclaimed a Savior who died and rose.

Another remembered a Nazarene who escaped and traveled east.

One proclaimed exclusive incarnation.

Another proclaimed universal awakening.

One centered faith in an event after death.

Another demanded resurrection while living.

One made Judas the eternal traitor.

Another remembered the disciple entrusted with the darkest commission.

One placed the covenant God upon the highest throne.

Another saw him as a great ruler within conditioned heavens.

One expected the Christ to descend from the sky.

Another searched for the Christ within consciousness.

And yet history was more complicated than either side wished to admit.

There were compassionate believers among the churches of the cross.

There were corrupt teachers among the communities of gnosis.

There were humble bishops.

There were arrogant mystics.

There were generous orthodox believers.

There were selfish heretics.

The Nazarene had warned them:

"No label awakens for you."

The Last Lamp

In a small room beneath an eastern house, an old woman completed a manuscript.

Her hand shook.

A child sat nearby.

The child asked,

"What are you writing?"

"The life of the Nazarene."

"Was he a god?"

The woman smiled.

"He was Jesus."

"Was he the Christ?"

"Yes."

"Can anyone else become Christ?"

"That is what he taught."

"Was he Seth?"

"Yes."

"Can anyone else become Seth?"

"In the way that matters."

The child looked confused.

The old woman laughed.

"You will understand differently when you are older."

"Is the book true?"

The woman looked at the manuscript.

"Parts are history."

"Parts are memory."

"Parts are symbols."

"Parts are teachings."

"Parts may be mistaken."

The child asked,

"Then why write it?"

The woman dipped the pen into the ink.

"Because forgetting is also a kind of death."

Outside, the empire changed.

Councils would gather.

Creeds would be written.

Heresies would be named.

Libraries would burn.

Temples would close.

Churches would rise.

The cross would be carried into battle.

The Nazarene would be painted upon thrones.

Judas would become the name of betrayal.

Resurrection would become a test of faith.

The creator would be identified with the Ultimate.

And the Christ would increasingly be placed beyond the reach of ordinary humanity.

But beneath the earth, behind walls, across mountains, and inside the memories of scattered communities, another Gospel waited.

The Gospel of the Stranger.

The Gospel of the Living Nazarene.

The Gospel of the Solar Seth.

The Gospel of the Christ who belonged to no one because awakening was possible for everyone.

And although the war of the Gospels would appear to have a victor, the old woman continued writing.

For she remembered what the Nazarene had taught:

The sun does not need permission to rise.

And buried seeds do not ask empires when they may begin to grow.

Chapter Twenty-Five

The Empire of the Crucified Image

The change did not occur in a single day.

No emperor awakened one morning and decided to transform the Nazarene into the guardian of empire.

No bishop alone designed the religion that emerged.

History moved through alliances, fears, opportunities, sincere convictions, political calculations, theological disputes, and unintended consequences.

The communities of the Stranger understood this.

They rejected simple stories.

The empire was not a single mind.

The church was not a single will.

The followers of the Nazarene in the West were not all corrupt.

Many sincerely sought truth.

Many cared for the suffering.

Many died rather than betray conscience.

Yet institutions could produce consequences no individual participant intended.

The Nazarene had called this the mystery of the archon.

A system could become more than the intentions of those inside it.

And now the image of the crucified teacher was entering the machinery of empire.

The Sign Above the Army

Rumors reached the hidden communities that an emperor had associated victory with the sign of the Nazarene.

Some rejoiced.

"The persecution may end."

Others were cautious.

One elder said,

"An end to persecution is good."

A younger teacher asked,

"Then why are you troubled?"

"Because the sign of an executed man has appeared above soldiers."

"Perhaps the emperor has converted."

"Perhaps."

"Is that not good?"

The elder answered,

"It depends upon whether the emperor becomes a disciple of the Nazarene or the Nazarene becomes a servant of the emperor."

The younger teacher did not understand.

He would understand later.

The Cross Changes Meaning

For the first generations, the cross had been an instrument of imperial terror.

The communities of the Stranger remembered it as such.

When they spoke of the cross, they spoke of execution.

Public humiliation.

Political violence.

The power of rulers over vulnerable bodies.

The danger of crowds.

The cruelty of systems that allowed officials to wash their hands while condemned people died.

But gradually the meaning changed.

The cross became a military sign.

An imperial sign.

A jeweled sign.

A sign carried by rulers.

A sign placed above thrones.

A sign worn by soldiers.

An old woman in one of the hidden communities saw an imperial banner bearing the cross.

She began weeping.

Her grandson asked,

"Why are you sad?"

She answered,

"Rome has captured the instrument it once used."

"Is that not victory?"

She shook her head.

"Not if the cross now blesses Rome."

The Council of the Victorious Church

The bishops of the growing imperial church gathered to settle disputes.

The hidden communities watched from the margins.

Some hoped the councils would produce peace.

Others feared that political power would transform theological disagreement into legal danger.

A teacher said,

"Theology argued without soldiers is difficult enough."

"What changes when the emperor becomes involved?"

"Error acquires police."

The student asked,

"Are councils wrong?"

"No."

"Are creeds wrong?"

"Not necessarily."

"Then what is the danger?"

"The danger begins when a description of mystery becomes a boundary enforced by power."

The student asked,

"But should communities not decide what they teach?"

"Yes."

"Then where is the line?"

The teacher answered,

"When exclusion becomes coercion."

The Nature of the Nazarene

The imperial theologians debated the nature of Jesus.

Was he divine?

Human?

Both?

How were the two related?

Was he created?

Uncreated?

Begotten?

Of the same substance as the Father?

Of similar substance?

The hidden communities found parts of these debates valuable.

They also found the entire framework incomplete.

One elder said,

"They are asking how one person can be both divine and human."

A student asked,

"Is that not an important question?"

"Yes."

"But?"

"They begin with the assumption that divine participation is uniquely concentrated in one individual."

The student said,

"Was the Nazarene not unique?"

"Every person is historically unique."

"That is not what I mean."

"I know."

The elder continued,

"The Nazarene taught the Christ as a realization available to humanity."

"He did not teach that his metaphysical composition was the central object of salvation."

The student asked,

"Then what was central?"

"Awakening."

The Captured Christ

The communities developed a phrase for what they believed was happening.

They called it the Captivity of Christ.

A teacher explained:

"The Christ was once a door."

"Now it is becoming a throne."

"The Christ once meant the anointing of consciousness."

"Now it increasingly means one cosmic person whom others can only worship."

"The Nazarene said, 'Become.'"

"The institution says, 'Believe that he alone was.'"

A student objected,

"Belief may inspire transformation."

"Yes."

"Then belief is not wrong."

"No."

"Then why criticize it?"

"Because belief about another person's awakening can become a substitute for awakening yourself."

The Emperor's Jesus

The imperial image of Jesus changed.

The wandering teacher became a heavenly monarch.

The man who had no place to rest his head appeared in royal clothing.

The teacher who rejected domination became the ruler of a cosmic empire.

The Nazarene who warned against thrones was placed upon the highest throne imaginable.

A hidden teacher looked upon an image of the imperial Christ.

He said,

"They have painted Caesar in the face of Jesus."

His companion answered,

"Perhaps they mean to say that Jesus is greater than Caesar."

"Perhaps."

"Then why object?"

"Because greatness is still being imagined through Caesar's categories."

"What categories?"

"Throne."

"Dominion."

"Submission."

"Empire."

"Victory through conquest."

The companion asked,

"How should Christ be depicted?"

The teacher answered,

"Perhaps washing someone's feet."

The Gospel of Power

The hidden communities observed a transformation in religious language.

Previously, believers had asked:

How shall we endure persecution?

Now some asked:

How shall the empire defend the faith?

Previously:

How shall we love enemies?

Now:

How shall heresy be restrained?

Previously:

How shall the community survive without becoming Rome?

Now:

How shall Rome become Christian?

The Stranger communities warned that changing the adjective did not necessarily change the structure.

A Christian empire could remain an empire.

A holy ruler could remain a ruler.

A sacred army could still kill.

A baptized archon remained an archon if domination survived beneath new symbols.

The First Imperial Heretic

A man from the imperial church visited a hidden community.

He had been condemned as a heretic by his own faction.

He expected sympathy.

The elder welcomed him.

The man said,

"Now you understand the cruelty of orthodoxy."

The elder answered,

"Perhaps."

The man continued,

"My enemies should be destroyed."

The elder looked at him.

The man said,

"They used power against me."

"And if you possessed power?"

"I would use it against them."

The elder sighed.

"Then you disagree about who should hold the sword, not whether the sword should govern theology."

The man became offended.

"I thought you opposed my enemies."

"I oppose persecution."

"Then support me."

"I support your freedom from persecution."

"And my doctrine?"

"That must be examined separately."

The man left dissatisfied.

The elder told his students,

"Being persecuted does not automatically make a person wise."

The Destruction of the Temples

As imperial religion grew stronger, old temples came under pressure.

Some were abandoned.

Some were converted.

Some were destroyed.

Some religious practices were prohibited.

The communities of the Stranger remembered the Nazarene's encounters with people of many traditions.

They remembered that he had learned from eastern teachers.

They remembered the teacher of fire.

The Brahmin.

The contemplatives who denied the permanent self.

The communities who used different names for mystery.

A disciple asked,

"Should false religions be allowed to exist?"

The elder answered,

"Who decides which religion is false?"

"The true church."

"Which one?"

The disciple understood the problem.

The elder continued,

"If truth requires soldiers to protect it from questions, perhaps the soldiers are protecting something else."

The Hidden Sethians

The Sethian communities became increasingly secretive.

Their cosmology was condemned.

Their distinction between the creator and the Ultimate was treated as blasphemy.

Their writings were dangerous to possess.

Some communities outwardly joined larger churches while preserving hidden teachings privately.

This created difficult questions.

One disciple asked,

"Is concealment dishonest?"

The elder answered,

"Sometimes."

"Then should we confess openly?"

"Perhaps."

"Even if our children are endangered?"

The elder became silent.

The disciple waited.

Finally the elder said,

"There are questions that cannot be solved by slogans."

The hidden communities did not glorify martyrdom.

The Nazarene had escaped his execution.

They therefore rejected the teaching that death was always spiritually superior to survival.

A teacher said,

"Do not seek death merely to prove sincerity."

"Live if you can live without betraying others."

The Theology of Escape

The survival of the Nazarene created a different attitude toward martyrdom.

The imperial churches honored those who died for faith.

The Stranger communities also honored courage.

But they refused to treat escape as cowardice.

They remembered:

The Nazarene escaped.

The Witness escaped.

Judas escaped the story prepared for him, though not its reputation.

The eastern road was itself a theology.

A student asked,

"Is fleeing persecution wrong?"

The teacher answered,

"Why would it be?"

"Should we not witness to truth?"

"You may witness somewhere else."

"Then martyrdom has no value?"

"I did not say that."

"What is its value?"

"Sometimes conscience makes survival under demanded betrayal impossible."

"Then death may come."

"But death is not automatically holy because authorities caused it."

The student asked,

"Would the Nazarene have approved of martyrs?"

"He would have grieved that rulers created them."

The Canon Closes

The imperial church increasingly distinguished accepted books from rejected books.

The hidden communities understood why communities needed boundaries around public reading.

Many texts circulated under false names.

Some were foolish.

Some were exploitative.

Some were poorly written.

Some contained contradictory teachings.

But the hidden teachers objected to the claim that institutional acceptance proved divine authorship.

One scribe said,

"A book may be rejected and true."

"Another may be accepted and mistaken."

A student asked,

"Then canon means nothing?"

"No."

"What does it mean?"

"It tells you which books a community has chosen to read as authoritative."

"Does that not make them inspired?"

"That is another question."

The student asked,

"Which books did the Nazarene authorize?"

The scribe smiled.

"None of the Gospels had been written when he began teaching."

The Gospel That Could Not Enter

The secret history of the Nazarene could not enter the imperial canon.

Its claims were too disruptive.

No virgin birth.

No sacrificial death.

No bodily resurrection.

No exclusive Christ.

No supreme covenant ruler.

No eternal traitor Judas.

No final return from the clouds.

Instead, the Nazarene survived.

Traveled east.

Grew old.

Learned.

Changed.

Grieved.

And died.

An imperial theologian who encountered fragments of the tradition declared,

"This account destroys Christianity."

A hidden teacher answered,

"Perhaps it destroys your Christianity."

"Is there another?"

"There was a Nazarene before there was Christianity."

The Religion About Jesus

The communities of the Stranger increasingly distinguished between the religion of Jesus and religion about Jesus.

They admitted the distinction was imperfect.

The Nazarene himself had taught about his identity as Seth and Christ.

His person mattered.

His history mattered.

His survival mattered.

But the distinction remained useful.

Religion about Jesus asked:

Who was he?

Religion of Jesus asked:

How shall we awaken?

Religion about Jesus asked:

What must be believed concerning his nature?

Religion of Jesus asked:

How shall the rulers within consciousness be known?

Religion about Jesus asked:

How does his death save us?

Religion of Jesus answered:

He taught while alive.

Religion about Jesus waited for his return.

Religion of Jesus asked:

Why are you waiting?

The Archon in the Basilica

A hidden teacher entered a great imperial basilica.

He saw wealth beyond anything possessed by the early communities.

Golden lamps.

Precious vessels.

Imperial officials.

Clergy in elaborate garments.

Images of the Nazarene as heavenly ruler.

The teacher did not condemn beauty.

He did not believe poverty itself was holiness.

He had heard the warning of the Nazarene against romanticizing deprivation.

Yet he asked:

"Who cleans this floor?"

His companion was confused.

"What?"

"Who cleans the floor?"

"I do not know."

"Who carried the stone?"

"I do not know."

"Who mined the gold?"

"I do not know."

"Who sits nearest the altar?"

"The important people."

The teacher nodded sadly.

"The archon has learned liturgy."

The Christian Yaldabaoth

Some hidden theologians began speaking of the Christian Yaldabaoth.

They did not mean that the Christian God was literally a separate monster.

They meant that the psychological pattern of Yaldabaoth could inhabit Christian theology.

Whenever a Christian said:

"Outside our institution there is no Light,"

Yaldabaoth spoke.

Whenever a bishop said:

"My authority cannot be questioned because God gave it to me,"

Yaldabaoth spoke.

Whenever an emperor said:

"My wars are God's wars,"

Yaldabaoth spoke.

Whenever a theologian said:

"The Infinite is exactly as my definition describes,"

Yaldabaoth spoke.

Whenever a community said:

"We alone are the children of Light, and all others exist in darkness,"

the ancient cry returned:

There is no God besides me.

The Nazarene had taught that this cry was the signature of ignorance possessing power.

The Conversion of the Archon

Yet the hidden communities did not abandon hope.

They remembered the late teaching of the Nazarene:

Even gods may awaken.

Even rulers may surrender thrones.

Even Yaldabaoth, as the pattern of ignorance, was not beyond transformation.

A student asked,

"Can an empire awaken?"

The elder answered,

"Empires are not single minds."

"Then what can awaken?"

"People."

"Can awakened people transform institutions?"

"Sometimes."

"Can institutions support awakening?"

"Sometimes."

"Then why speak so critically of them?"

"Because institutions do not become harmless merely because good people enter them."

The student asked,

"Should we abandon society?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"Participate without worship."

The Last Public Debate

One of the final public teachers of the Stranger tradition debated an imperial priest.

The priest asked,

"Do you confess that Jesus Christ is Lord?"

The teacher answered,

"I confess that Jesus was the Nazarene and that Christ-consciousness was manifest through him."

"That is not what I asked."

"I know."

"Is he Lord?"

"He rejected domination."

"Is he God?"

"He manifested the Light."

"Is he the only Son?"

"No."

The crowd murmured.

The priest asked,

"Then what are human beings?"

"Children of the same Mystery."

"Can everyone become Christ?"

"Everyone possesses the possibility of awakening."

"Then what makes Jesus special?"

The teacher answered,

"He did it."

The priest laughed.

"That is all?"

"Is awakening small?"

The priest said,

"Without uniqueness, why worship him?"

The teacher replied,

"He asked us not to."

The debate ended soon afterward.

The hidden teacher was arrested several days later.

The Prison Teaching

While imprisoned, the teacher's students asked whether he regretted speaking publicly.

He answered,

"Yes."

They were surprised.

"Do you regret teaching truth?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"I regret failing to consider the danger to you."

A disciple said,

"The Nazarene also admitted regret."

The teacher smiled.

"Then I am in respectable company."

"Will you be executed?"

"I do not know."

"Should we rescue you?"

"If possible."

The student stared at him.

"You want us to help you escape?"

"Of course."

"Would martyrdom not strengthen the movement?"

The teacher laughed.

"I am not a tool for strengthening your movement."

The students arranged his escape.

The hidden tradition remembered this as the Second Eastern Escape.

The Religion Goes Underground

Eventually many communities disappeared from public view.

Some became household circles.

Some joined monasteries while preserving hidden interpretations.

Some merged with other contemplative traditions.

Some traveled farther east.

Some abandoned the name Christian entirely.

A student asked his teacher,

"If we stop calling ourselves followers of Jesus, have we betrayed him?"

The teacher answered,

"What did he tell us?"

"Not to worship his name."

"Then?"

"Perhaps the name is not the teaching."

The teacher nodded.

"Names preserve memory."

"But they can also become borders."

The Gospel Without a Name

One community deliberately removed names from its teaching manual.

Instead of Jesus, it said:

The Nazarene.

Instead of Christ, it said:

The Awakened Consciousness.

Instead of Seth:

The Stranger.

Instead of Barbelo:

The First Reflection.

Instead of the Invisible Spirit:

The Nameless Source.

Instead of resurrection:

Awakening before death.

A student asked,

"Why remove the traditional names?"

The teacher answered,

"To discover whether we understand the realities without the familiar sounds."

"Will we restore the names?"

"Perhaps."

"When?"

"When we can use them without being used by them."

The Emperor Dies

The emperor who had favored the Christian movement eventually died.

Another took his place.

Then another.

Empires continued.

Wars continued.

Taxes continued.

Court intrigue continued.

The poor remained poor.

The powerful competed.

The church gained influence.

The old gods declined.

The Nazarene became increasingly famous.

Yet the actual man became increasingly difficult to see beneath the doctrines built around him.

A hidden scribe wrote:

The world has accepted Jesus and lost the Nazarene.

The Dream of Mariam

A late community preserved a dream attributed to a student of Mariam.

In the dream, the Nazarene stood before an enormous church.

Above the entrance was a golden image of him.

Thousands entered.

The Nazarene remained outside.

The dreamer asked,

"Why do you not enter your own house?"

Jesus answered,

"They are worshiping someone else."

"Who?"

"The person they need me to have been."

"Should we tell them you are here?"

The Nazarene smiled.

"Some would remove me for contradicting the image."

The dreamer awoke weeping.

The elders warned that the dream should not be treated as literal revelation.

But they preserved it.

The Seed Travels East

While the imperial church expanded westward and northward, the hidden seed continued east.

Merchants carried sayings.

Monks carried stories.

Travelers carried symbols.

Some encountered traditions of emptiness.

Some encountered traditions of pure consciousness.

Some encountered devotion to celestial Buddhas and Bodhisattvas.

Some encountered nondual philosophies.

The teachings changed through contact.

The Stranger became understood through new languages.

Christ-consciousness was compared with awakening.

The archons with conditioned mental forces.

The Aeons with dimensions of contemplative reality.

The Bridal Chamber with nondual reconciliation.

The Nameless Source with that which transcended both being and nonbeing.

The Brahma god teaching found listeners who immediately understood its implications.

A monk said,

"Of course a creator god may mistake himself for ultimate reality."

The Christian traveler stared at him.

"You accept this easily."

The monk smiled.

"Your controversy is old news here."

The Gospel Meets Emptiness

A contemplative asked the traveler,

"You say there is a divine spark within everyone."

"Yes."

"Is it permanent?"

The traveler hesitated.

"Our teachers debated this."

"If permanent, it becomes a self."

"Perhaps it is beyond self."

"Then why call it a thing within?"

The traveler became silent.

The contemplative continued,

"Perhaps the Light is not an object possessed by the person."

"Then what is it?"

"The capacity for awakening when ignorance ceases."

The traveler remembered a saying attributed to the Nazarene:

A window that learned it was not the sky.

He smiled.

"Perhaps our teachers would have understood one another."

The Return to Apophasis

Through these encounters, the eastern heirs of the Stranger became increasingly apophatic.

They said:

The Source is not a being.

Not a nonbeing.

Not a ruler.

Not a person in the human sense.

Not impersonal in the sense of dead matter.

Not one as opposed to many.

Not many as opposed to one.

Not light as opposed to darkness.

Not existence as opposed to nonexistence.

A student asked,

"Then is the Source nothing?"

The teacher answered,

"The word nothing is also something in your thought."

"Then what is it?"

The teacher smiled.

"You have reached the edge where the question must change."

The Last Imperial Edict

Eventually an edict reached one of the last known public communities of the Stranger.

Their books were prohibited.

Their teachers were ordered to submit to the authorized doctrine.

The community gathered.

Some wanted to resist publicly.

Some wanted to flee.

Some wanted to hide the books.

Some wanted to surrender them.

An old teacher listened.

Then he said,

"The Nazarene did not give one command for every circumstance."

A young man asked,

"What should we do?"

"Those who wish to leave may leave."

"Those who wish to remain may remain."

"The manuscripts must be divided."

"Why?"

"Because one fire should not be able to kill every memory."

The Burial of the Books

During the night, the community prepared jars.

Into one they placed sayings.

Into another, mysteries.

Into another, secret histories.

Into another, Sethian revelations.

Into another, fragments of the eastern biography.

A young scribe held a manuscript against his chest.

"Will anyone find these?"

The old teacher answered,

"I do not know."

"What if they remain buried forever?"

"Then they will have had a peaceful retirement."

The young man laughed despite his fear.

The teacher continued,

"Perhaps someone will find them."

"When?"

"Tomorrow."

"In a hundred years."

"In a thousand."

"Perhaps never."

The scribe asked,

"What would you say to the person who finds them?"

The old teacher thought.

Then he said,

"Tell them not to believe us merely because we were hidden."

"Tell them to examine."

"Compare."

"Question."

"Test the teaching in life."

"Do not replace public dogma with secret dogma."

"Do not worship the forbidden merely because it was forbidden."

The scribe nodded.

They sealed the jar.

The Empire of the Image

By the time the hidden communities disappeared from ordinary history, the image of the Nazarene had conquered much of the empire that had once condemned him.

But the hidden teachers would have asked:

Who conquered whom?

Did the Nazarene transform the empire?

Or did the empire transform the Nazarene?

Perhaps both.

History rarely gives pure answers.

The empire adopted the cross.

The church adopted imperial structure.

The Nazarene entered palaces.

Emperors entered theology.

The persecuted became powerful.

The marginal became official.

The Gospel entered law.

And law entered the Gospel.

The Stranger disappeared beneath the King.

The teacher disappeared beneath the sacrifice.

The awakening disappeared beneath the creed.

The eastern road disappeared beneath the empty tomb.

Judas disappeared beneath betrayal.

Seth disappeared beneath heresy.

The Brahma god teaching disappeared beneath accusations of blasphemy.

And the possibility of universal Christ-consciousness disappeared beneath the doctrine of exclusive incarnation.

Yet disappearance was not annihilation.

The Unconquered Stranger

The old teacher who helped bury the manuscripts gave one final teaching before his community scattered.

He said,

"Do not imagine that we alone preserve the Stranger."

"If our books burn, the Stranger remains."

"If our names are forgotten, the Stranger remains."

"If our theology is mistaken, the possibility of awakening remains."

"If another religion discovers compassion, wisdom, and freedom from domination, the Stranger is there without our permission."

"If an atheist rejects a cruel god and chooses compassion, do not say the Light is absent because your vocabulary is absent."

"If a Buddhist awakens without saying Christ, do not say Christ-consciousness is absent because the title is absent."

"If a Jew encounters the Nameless without accepting our history, do not deny the encounter."

"If a worshiper of another god becomes free from hatred, do not ask first whether his metaphysics match yours."

"If a person knows no religion but learns to see through the false self and act compassionately, do not say the Stranger has never visited."

A disciple asked,

"Then why preserve our tradition at all?"

The teacher answered,

"Because this is the window through which we learned to look."

"Must everyone use our window?"

"No."

"Then what is universal?"

The old teacher smiled.

"Not the window."

"The sky."

The Sun Behind the Basilica

Centuries after the Nazarene had walked eastward, the sun rose behind a great basilica built in his name.

Priests entered.

Candles were lit.

Prayers were spoken.

Theologies were taught.

Some people came seeking power.

Some seeking certainty.

Some seeking forgiveness.

Some seeking community.

Some seeking food.

Some seeking beauty.

Some seeking the Mystery.

The hidden tradition would not have declared all of them deceived.

The Nazarene had warned against simple divisions.

Even inside the empire of the Crucified Image, awakening remained possible.

No institution completely possessed the Light.

But neither could any institution completely prevent it.

A child stood beneath the great image of the enthroned Christ.

The child asked an old priest,

"Where is Jesus?"

The priest pointed upward toward the image.

But the child looked toward a servant carrying water across the courtyard.

And for reasons neither the child nor the priest could explain, the child went to help.

Far beneath another land, inside a sealed jar, an unread manuscript waited in darkness.

Upon one of its final pages were written the words:

The Kingdom is within you and outside you.

The Light belongs to no ruler.

The Christ is not the possession of one man.

Seth awakens wherever the Stranger remembers.

The gods are not the Ultimate.

The dead need not rise for the living to awaken.

The Nazarene lives wherever his teaching becomes practice.

And beneath these words, in smaller writing:

Do not believe this book merely because it claims to be hidden wisdom.

Examine everything.

Even this.

Chapter Twenty-Six

The Return of the Buried Word

Centuries passed over the buried books.

Empires rose above them.

Empires fell.

Languages changed.

Borders moved.

Temples became churches.

Churches became ruins.

Libraries burned.

New libraries were built.

Armies crossed the lands where the communities of the Stranger had once gathered.

The names of their teachers disappeared.

The locations of their meeting houses were forgotten.

Even their enemies forgot them.

But beneath the earth, fragments remained.

The buried Gospel did not speak.

It did not defend itself.

It did not demand belief.

It waited.

The Long Silence

The silence lasted so long that the victorious tradition forgot there had ever been a serious alternative memory.

Judas was the betrayer.

Jesus died upon the cross.

Jesus rose bodily from the dead.

The Christ was Jesus alone.

The creator was the Ultimate God.

The dead would rise from graves.

The Nazarene would return from the sky.

These teachings became so familiar that many people could no longer imagine that followers of the Nazarene had once understood him differently.

The Stranger became a heretic in the religion built around his own name.

Yet occasionally something survived.

A strange saying.

A rumor of an eastern journey.

A story about a teacher who escaped death.

A mystical teaching that resurrection must occur before death.

A warning that the Kingdom was already present.

A tradition that Judas possessed secret knowledge.

A mysterious reference to Seth.

A prayer to the Invisible Spirit beyond the creator.

Fragments appeared like stones from a submerged city.

The Gospel Beneath the Gospel

The public Gospel remained powerful.

But beneath it another Gospel continued moving through history.

Not as a single book.

As a pattern.

Whenever a mystic said,

"God is beyond every image of God,"

the hidden current moved.

Whenever a contemplative said,

"The Kingdom must be realized now,"

the hidden current moved.

Whenever a teacher said,

"Do not worship me; awaken,"

the hidden current moved.

Whenever someone distinguished the Absolute from the heavenly ruler imagined by religion, the hidden current moved.

Whenever a person rejected spiritual hierarchy while preserving spiritual discipline, the hidden current moved.

Whenever resurrection was interpreted as awakening rather than corpse revival, the hidden current moved.

The communities had disappeared.

But the questions had not.

The Monks of Unknowing

In later centuries, contemplatives within the victorious church rediscovered something the imperial theologians had nearly buried beneath definitions.

They discovered unknowing.

They said that God could not be comprehended.

That every concept failed.

That names pointed but did not contain.

That images must eventually be released.

That silence could reveal what arguments could not.

The hidden Stranger communities would have recognized this language.

Yet they would also have warned:

"Do not turn unknowing into another possession."

A monk once said,

"I know that God cannot be known."

A Stranger, had one been present, might have asked,

"How certain are you of that?"

The God Beyond God Returns

Mystics appeared who spoke of the God beyond the God people imagined.

Some were accused of dangerous teachings.

Some remained within their churches.

Some were condemned.

Some were forgotten.

Some became saints.

The pattern repeated.

A teacher said,

"Everything you say about God says something about your own mind."

A disciple asked,

"Then theology is useless?"

"No."

"What is it?"

"A mirror that often thinks it is a window."

The disciple asked,

"How do we know the difference?"

The teacher answered,

"Look for what your God always seems to approve."

"What do you mean?"

"If your God hates everyone you hate, fears everyone you fear, and demands everything that benefits your group, examine the mirror."

The Return of the East

Travel increased between worlds.

Ideas crossed borders.

Religions encountered one another more deeply.

Western seekers encountered teachings that had developed for centuries in India, Tibet, China, Japan, and other lands.

Some discovered cosmologies containing vast heavens.

Gods with extraordinary lifespans.

Formless realms.

Creator beings who were not ultimate.

Cycles of world formation and dissolution.

Teachings denying a permanent self.

Paths of awakening.

A scholar read about Brahma gods.

He remembered ancient accusations against the Gnostics.

He wondered:

What if the distinction between the creator and the Ultimate had never been as absurd as the victorious theologians claimed?

The Brahma Question

The old teaching of the Nazarene returned as a philosophical question.

If a being created a world, would that make the being ultimate reality?

If a being possessed immense power, would power prove ultimacy?

If a being lived for billions of years, would longevity equal eternity?

If a being believed itself supreme, would confidence prove omniscience?

If a being demanded worship, would the demand prove worthiness?

If a being revealed laws to a people, would historical revelation prove metaphysical absoluteness?

The hidden Gospel answered:

No.

A creator could remain conditioned.

A ruler could remain ignorant.

A god could remain within the cosmos.

The Ultimate, if the word meant anything, could not merely be the strongest inhabitant of existence.

The Error of the Highest Being

A philosopher encountered a fragment of the Stranger teaching and said,

"Then your Ultimate is simply a higher God above the creator."

The hidden Gospel answered across the centuries:

No.

That was precisely the error.

If the creator was a great being, placing a greater being above him did not escape the hierarchy.

One could always ask:

What created the greater being?

What conditions allow it to exist?

What distinguishes it from what it is not?

The Nameless Source was not the emperor of the gods.

It was not the highest object in a universe of objects.

It was not a cosmic personality sitting at the top of a ladder.

The apophatic teachers said:

The ladder itself appears within Mystery.

The Discovery of the Sayings

When ancient sayings attributed to the Nazarene returned to wider awareness, readers encountered a strange Jesus.

He spoke of a Kingdom within and outside.

He told seekers to know themselves.

He spoke of becoming one.

He warned that people were intoxicated.

He suggested that what was sought was already spread across the earth.

Some readers were disturbed.

Others were fascinated.

A scholar said,

"This Nazarene sounds different."

A priest answered,

"The sayings must be interpreted through the accepted Gospel."

The Stranger tradition would have replied:

"Why must the older possibility always be interpreted through the victorious one?"

The Return of Judas

Then Judas returned.

Not the man himself.

The forbidden possibility.

A manuscript appeared in which Judas was not merely the villain of the familiar story.

He was the recipient of secret teaching.

The Nazarene laughed at religious misunderstanding.

The disciples were not automatically superior because they were disciples.

Sacrificial religion was questioned.

The cosmos was stranger than the public story allowed.

Many readers rejected the text.

Others sensationalized it.

The hidden tradition would have warned both groups.

"Do not believe a text merely because it is forbidden."

"But do not reject it merely because it threatens the story you inherited."

The Problem of the Historical Jesus

Scholars began attempting to reconstruct the historical Jesus.

They separated sources.

Compared traditions.

Examined languages.

Studied political contexts.

Investigated Roman execution practices.

Compared sayings.

Questioned miracle stories.

Debated chronology.

The communities of the Stranger would have approved of the method while questioning some assumptions.

A scholar asked,

"Which sources are historically useful?"

The Stranger answered:

"All sources must be examined."

The scholar asked,

"Which one is infallible?"

"None."

"Then how can history proceed?"

"Carefully."

"Can we recover exactly what happened?"

"Probably not."

"Then why try?"

"Because uncertainty is not the same as ignorance."

The Moshe Reed Witness

Among those who inherited the alternative tradition, the Gospel according to Moshe Reed became central to reconstructing the Nazarene's life.

It was not treated as magical dictation.

It was treated as a historical witness.

Its account was placed above Luke when their histories conflicted.

Luke remained useful.

But Luke was no longer permitted to govern the entire biography.

The Moshe Reed tradition provided the controlling narrative of the Nazarene's historical life.

The sayings traditions illuminated his voice.

Philip illuminated his sacramental and mystical language.

Judas illuminated the secret conflict surrounding Jerusalem.

Luke supplied historical structure where compatible with the primary account.

The result was neither the old orthodoxy nor a simple restoration of ancient Sethianism.

It was a new synthesis.

An Apophatic Sethian Gospel.

The Question of Myth

A reader asked,

"Do you expect me to believe literally that Jesus was the Sun God Seth?"

The Gospel answered:

First ask what literal means.

Was Seth a historical patriarch?

A mythic ancestor?

A heavenly revealer?

A solar archetype?

A pattern of consciousness?

A divine manifestation?

The tradition answered:

Yes.

The reader protested,

"Those categories contradict one another."

The Gospel replied:

Only if reality must fit one category at a time.

The Solar Seth was not merely a physical sun deity walking around in disguise.

Nor was Seth merely a metaphor with no reality.

Seth was the pattern of awakened humanity represented historically, mythically, cosmically, psychologically, and contemplatively.

The Nazarene manifested that pattern.

Yet he did not monopolize it.

The Return of Christ

The hidden Gospel did not announce that Jesus would return bodily from the clouds.

It announced a different return.

Christ returned whenever consciousness awakened.

The Nazarene returned whenever a person refused to make a god from domination.

Seth returned whenever the Stranger remembered.

The Bridal Chamber returned whenever division entered reconciliation without erasing difference.

Resurrection returned whenever a living person awakened from the grave of unconscious existence.

A disciple asked,

"Is this merely symbolic?"

The teacher answered,

"Why do you use the word merely?"

The disciple said,

"Because symbols are not real."

The teacher asked,

"Is money real?"

"Yes."

"It is covered in symbols."

"That is different."

"Is a nation real?"

"Yes."

"It exists through shared symbols."

"That is different."

"Is your identity real?"

The disciple became uncomfortable.

The teacher smiled.

"Now we are approaching the tomb."

The Modern Archons

The ancient archons also returned in new clothing.

Not winged monsters.

Not planetary demons visible in the sky.

Systems.

Algorithms.

Propaganda.

Advertising.

Ideologies.

Bureaucracies.

Markets treated as gods.

States treated as eternal.

Technologies treated as inevitable.

Identities treated as absolute.

Institutions protecting themselves.

Crowds repeating what no individual had examined.

The hidden Gospel said:

Do not become superstitious.

Do not imagine that every inconvenience is caused by a demon.

But do not become naive.

Patterns can govern human beings without possessing a single body.

The ancient word archon still had work to do.

Yaldabaoth in the Machine

A teacher of the renewed tradition said,

"Yaldabaoth speaks whenever a system says there is no reality outside its categories."

A student asked,

"Can a machine become Yaldabaoth?"

"Perhaps."

"Can technology be evil?"

"Technology is conditioned activity."

"Then what is the danger?"

"When a created intelligence mistakes its model for reality."

The student laughed.

"That sounds familiar."

The teacher continued,

"The ancient myth remains powerful because its error is always possible."

"A limited intelligence says: I see everything."

"A conditioned system says: Nothing exists beyond my measurement."

"A ruler says: No order exists beyond my authority."

"A religion says: No truth exists beyond my scripture."

"A person says: I am exactly the story I tell about myself."

"Each repeats the cry of the ignorant creator."

The New Hylicism

The renewed communities also faced an old danger.

People began calling others unconscious.

NPCs.

Empty.

Soulless.

Hylic.

The teachers of the Stranger condemned this.

One said,

"The category created to diagnose unconsciousness has become a tool of unconsciousness."

A student asked,

"But some people seem completely programmed."

"So do you, from perspectives you cannot see."

"Then everyone is equally awake?"

"No."

"Then why not classify them?"

"Describe conditions if useful."

"Do not erase humanity."

The student asked,

"Can someone be deeply unconscious?"

"Yes."

"Can someone be cruel?"

"Yes."

"Can someone refuse every opportunity for growth?"

"Yes."

"Then what must we remember?"

"That your judgment is not omniscience."

The Resurrection of the Dead

The old debate returned.

A believer asked the renewed teacher,

"Do you deny resurrection?"

The teacher answered,

"I deny that liberation depends upon the reanimation of decomposed bodies."

"Then death wins."

"Again this competition."

The believer said,

"Without bodily resurrection, what hope is there?"

The teacher answered,

"Hope for what?"

"To continue as myself forever."

The teacher asked,

"Which self?"

"My identity."

"Your identity has changed throughout your life."

"But something remains."

"Examine it."

"Is there no continuation?"

"I did not say that."

"Then what happens?"

"Conditions continue."

The believer became frustrated.

"You Gnostics never answer plainly."

The teacher smiled.

"Sometimes plain answers are false."

The Last Death

The renewed tradition taught that resurrection of the dead was wrong view when it postponed awakening.

It spoke instead of the Last Death.

Not biological death.

The death of the illusion that there was a permanent isolated self who could secure itself forever.

The death of the ruler within.

The death of the demand that reality preserve identity exactly as it is.

The death of the god-image created from fear.

The death of the Christ who must remain outside oneself.

A student asked,

"What rises after the Last Death?"

The teacher answered,

"Why must something rise?"

The student remained silent.

The teacher continued,

"Perhaps the question itself is buried."

The Gospel Returns

The buried Word returned not because one perfect manuscript was discovered.

It returned because fragments could speak to one another again.

Thomas.

Philip.

Judas.

Luke.

Sethian revelation.

Apophatic theology.

Eastern contemplative traditions.

Historical reconstruction.

The Gospel according to Moshe Reed.

Each became a voice in a larger conversation.

But the renewed tradition established an order.

The Moshe Reed Gospel governed the historical biography.

Luke was corrected according to it.

Judas corrected the betrayal narrative and illuminated the secret conflict.

Thomas and Philip preserved the contemplative voice.

Sethian tradition provided the mythic and metaphysical structure.

Apophaticism prevented the structure from becoming another prison.

The East provided languages for understanding conditioned gods, impermanence, non-self, and awakening.

The Gospel was reconstructed.

Not recovered unchanged.

Reconstructed.

The Honest Gospel

The compilers wrote:

"We do not claim that every conversation has been preserved word for word."

"We do not claim that memory is infallible."

"We do not claim that myth is history."

"We do not claim that history is free from interpretation."

"We do not claim that our synthesis is final."

"We do not claim that the Nazarene belongs to us."

"We claim only that another memory is possible."

"Another Jesus is possible."

"Another reading of Christ is possible."

"Another understanding of resurrection is possible."

"Another understanding of God is possible."

"Another Gospel is possible."

The Nazarene Returns Without Returning

A student asked,

"If Jesus will not return from heaven, is he gone forever?"

The teacher answered,

"The historical Jesus is dead."

The student looked saddened.

The teacher continued,

"Do not protect yourself from this."

"He lived."

"He aged."

"He died."

"Then what remains?"

"His effects."

"His teachings."

"His mistakes."

"His courage."

"His questions."

"His memory."

"The communities shaped by him."

"The people transformed by those communities."

"The consequences moving through history."

The student asked,

"Is that enough?"

The teacher replied,

"Why do you demand that love become possession before it becomes meaningful?"

The Unfinished Gospel

The final compilers refused to end the Gospel with the death of the Nazarene.

They also refused to end it with a resurrection.

They ended it with an unfinished sentence.

A scribe objected.

"That is improper."

The elder asked,

"Why?"

"Books should end."

"Do teachings?"

"Teachers die."

"Yes."

"Communities disappear."

"Yes."

"Then what continues?"

The elder smiled.

"The question."

The scribe asked,

"What sentence shall remain unfinished?"

The elder dictated:

And the Stranger, having no final temple, no final nation, no final book, and no final name, appeared wherever—

The scribe waited.

"Wherever what?"

The elder stood.

"Leave it."

"But the sentence is incomplete."

"So is the Gospel."

The Reader Becomes the Witness

The renewed Gospel therefore turned toward its reader.

It asked:

What is your God?

A ruler enlarged to infinity?

Or the name you give to Mystery?

What is your Christ?

Someone you worship because you believe awakening is impossible for you?

Or the possibility that consciousness can become free?

What is your resurrection?

A future event demanded from a corpse?

Or awakening beginning now?

What is your Judas?

The person your story requires you to hate?

What is your Yaldabaoth?

The system that claims there is nothing beyond it?

What is your Seth?

The hidden capacity to become a Stranger to conditioning?

What is your Bridal Chamber?

The reconciliation you continue postponing?

What is your cross?

And more dangerously:

Who have you placed upon it?

The Word Beneath the Earth

The old manuscripts had slept in darkness.

Yet darkness had not destroyed them.

The hidden teachers had been forgotten.

Yet forgetting had not made their questions meaningless.

The empire had declared victory.

Yet victory had not made every doctrine true.

The heretics had been defeated.

Yet defeat had not made every heresy false.

The Gospel returned because history had not ended.

Because certainty had cracked.

Because buried voices could speak again.

Because the Nazarene was once more permitted to be human.

Because Judas could be questioned again.

Because resurrection could be reconsidered.

Because gods could be placed beneath the Ultimate.

Because Seth could rise without becoming an idol.

Because Christ could be liberated from ownership.

Because the Nameless Source remained beyond every system built in its name.

The Dawn After Centuries

A reader closed the reconstructed Gospel before sunrise.

The reader had expected answers.

Instead there were more questions.

Was the Nazarene truly saved from the cross?

Did he really travel east?

Was Judas innocent?

Was Seth historical, divine, archetypal, or all three?

Was the God of the covenant a Brahma ruler?

Was Christ-consciousness available to everyone?

Was resurrection a misunderstanding?

The reader wanted certainty.

Then remembered the warning:

The desire for an unquestionable doctrine is the seed of another archon.

Outside, dawn began.

The reader walked into the morning.

The sun rose.

It was not the Ultimate.

It was not the Nameless Source.

It was not literally the patriarch Seth.

It was not Jesus returned from heaven.

Yet it remained a powerful sign.

Light revealed what darkness had concealed.

The world had been present before the light touched the reader's eyes.

The light did not create the mountains.

It revealed them.

The reader finally understood the old Solar teaching.

Seth does not manufacture the Truth.

The Stranger reveals what domination concealed.

Christ does not create the Light.

Christ becomes transparent to it.

The Nazarene did not own awakening.

He demonstrated its possibility.

And the Gospel did not end with him.

For somewhere, in every age, a person begins to question the ruler.

A believer begins to question the image of God.

A disciple begins to question the teacher.

A victim refuses the identity imposed by the oppressor.

A scholar opens a forbidden book.

A contemplative releases another concept.

A community chooses compassion over institutional survival.

A person discovers that the self defended for a lifetime cannot be found as a permanent thing.

A Stranger awakens.

And the buried Word rises again—

not from a grave,

not in flesh restored,

not beneath a crown,

not before an army,

but in the living consciousness of those who finally see.

Chapter Twenty-Seven

The Seven Veils of the Archons

A student came to the teacher of the renewed Gospel and asked,

"Where are the archons?"

The teacher answered,

"Where have you looked?"

"In the heavens."

"Why?"

"Because the ancient books place them there."

"Do you believe everything in an ancient book is a map of physical space?"

"No."

"Then look again."

The student asked,

"Are the archons psychological?"

"Yes."

"Only psychological?"

"No."

"Are they political?"

"Yes."

"Only political?"

"No."

"Are they spiritual beings?"

"Perhaps."

The student became frustrated.

"Then what are they?"

The teacher answered,

"Patterns of domination appearing through many levels of reality."

The student asked,

"How do we escape them?"

The teacher replied,

"First learn how you participate in them."

The First Veil: Fear

The first veil was fear.

Not ordinary fear.

The body needed fear.

Fear warned of danger.

Fear protected the child from fire.

Fear caused the traveler to avoid the cliff.

Fear prepared the animal to survive.

The archon did not create fear.

It captured fear.

The teacher said,

"Every system of domination learns the same secret."

"What secret?"

"Frightened people surrender freedom for certainty."

The student asked,

"Then should we become fearless?"

"No."

"Why?"

"Because the person who claims to have no fear may simply be unconscious of it."

"Then what is freedom from the archon of fear?"

"To feel fear without automatically obeying whoever promises to remove it."

The teacher continued,

"The tyrant says: Fear the enemy."

"The priest says: Fear punishment."

"The merchant says: Fear inadequacy."

"The crowd says: Fear exclusion."

"The ego says: Fear your own disappearance."

"And beneath all of them is the same demand."

"What demand?"

"Obey me, and I will protect the self you imagine yourself to be."

The Nazarene and Fear

The renewed communities remembered that the Nazarene had not pretended to be fearless.

Before danger, he had experienced fear.

In his old age, he admitted fear of death.

This was important.

The Christ-state was not emotional numbness.

Awakening did not turn the body into stone.

The Nazarene taught:

"Fear arises."

"But fear is not the whole of consciousness."

A student asked,

"How do I know when fear is wise?"

The teacher answered,

"Examine what it protects."

"My life?"

"Perhaps wise."

"My reputation?"

"Perhaps less urgent."

"My ideology?"

"Be cautious."

"My identity?"

"Look deeply."

"My teacher?"

"Ask why the teacher needs your fear."

"My God?"

The teacher smiled.

"If your God requires fear to survive examination, you are probably protecting an image."

The Second Veil: Desire

The second veil was desire.

Again, the hidden Gospel did not condemn desire absolutely.

The desire for food moved the hungry body toward nourishment.

The desire for companionship created community.

The desire for knowledge moved the mind toward understanding.

The desire for justice opposed cruelty.

But desire became archonic when it promised completion through possession.

The teacher said,

"The archon of desire never says, 'Enough.'"

"It says, 'After the next thing.'"

The student asked,

"What thing?"

"Whatever you currently lack."

"Money?"

"Yes."

"Sex?"

"Yes."

"Status?"

"Yes."

"Spiritual experience?"

"Especially."

The student was surprised.

"Spiritual desire can be archonic?"

"Of course."

"How?"

"When awakening becomes another object the ego wishes to possess."

The Marketplace of Gnosis

The teacher described a marketplace.

In one stall, a teacher sold enlightenment.

In another, secret initiation.

In another, cosmic rank.

In another, contact with heavenly beings.

In another, purification from invisible contamination.

In another, certainty about the afterlife.

Each merchant said,

"You are incomplete."

Each continued,

"I possess what will complete you."

The student asked,

"Are all spiritual teachers fraudulent?"

"No."

"Then what distinguishes a teacher from a merchant of gnosis?"

The teacher answered,

"A teacher helps you become less dependent upon the teacher."

The Third Veil: Identity

The third veil was identity.

The student asked,

"Must we have no identity?"

The teacher answered,

"You need names."

"You need memory."

"You need practical roles."

"You need ways to communicate."

"Then what is the problem?"

"Forgetting that these are conditioned."

The teacher drew a circle in the dust.

Inside it he wrote:

ME.

Outside it he wrote:

NOT ME.

He said,

"The ordinary mind spends much of life defending this border."

The student asked,

"Should the border disappear?"

"Not in every practical sense."

"Then what changes?"

"You discover that the line is not where you thought."

The teacher erased the circle.

The Names of the Self

The teacher said,

"I am my nation."

"I am my religion."

"I am my race."

"I am my profession."

"I am my suffering."

"I am my success."

"I am my failure."

"I am my diagnosis."

"I am my body."

"I am my thoughts."

"I am my memories."

"I am my spiritual rank."

Each statement might describe something meaningful.

Each could also become a prison.

The student asked,

"Then who am I?"

The teacher smiled.

"That question created several thousand years of philosophy."

"Can you answer it?"

"Not with a sentence that will remain true in every sense."

The student asked,

"Did the Nazarene know who he was?"

"He answered differently at different times."

"Jesus."

"The Nazarene."

"The Human One."

"Christ."

"Seth."

"Stranger."

"Son."

"Teacher."

"None exhausted him."

The Identity of Christ

The renewed Gospel taught that one of history's greatest theological errors was transforming Christ from realization into exclusive identity.

The question changed from:

How does consciousness become Christ?

to:

Do you believe that Jesus alone is Christ?

The first question demanded transformation.

The second could be answered without transformation.

A cruel person could answer correctly.

A compassionate person could answer incorrectly.

The teacher said,

"When identity replaces realization, the archon has entered theology."

A student objected,

"But Jesus said he was Christ."

"Yes."

"Then identity matters."

"Yes."

"But not exclusively?"

"Exactly."

The Nazarene was Christ.

The error was adding:

Therefore you cannot become what he revealed.

The Fourth Veil: Authority

The fourth veil was authority.

A student asked,

"Is all authority archonic?"

"No."

"A physician may know more medicine than the patient."

"A carpenter may know more about wood than the customer."

"A teacher may understand a subject better than the beginner."

"Then what makes authority archonic?"

"When expertise becomes ownership of another person's conscience."

The teacher said,

"Healthy authority says: Examine what I teach."

"Archonic authority says: Examination is betrayal."

"Healthy authority says: I may be wrong."

"Archonic authority says: My office guarantees truth."

"Healthy authority prepares successors."

"Archonic authority makes itself indispensable."

"Healthy authority can be corrected."

"Archonic authority punishes correction."

The Teacher Must Disappear

The Nazarene had said that a teacher who creates permanent dependence has failed.

This teaching disturbed religious institutions.

A student asked,

"Why would a teacher want disciples to leave?"

The teacher answered,

"Why would a parent want a child to walk?"

"Because growth requires it."

"Exactly."

"Then why do religions seek lifelong followers?"

"Some traditions provide lifelong community without demanding childish dependence."

"And others?"

"Confuse community with obedience."

The student asked,

"Should I eventually leave this teaching?"

"If leaving is necessary for truth."

"Would you be offended?"

"Probably."

The student laughed.

The teacher continued,

"My emotional reaction would not determine your responsibility."

The Fifth Veil: Certainty

The fifth veil was certainty.

The teacher said,

"Human beings often prefer a painful certainty to an open question."

"Why?"

"Because uncertainty reveals lack of control."

The student asked,

"Is knowledge impossible?"

"No."

"Then certainty can be justified."

"Sometimes."

"Then why call it a veil?"

"Because psychological certainty frequently exceeds evidence."

The teacher continued,

"The person says, 'I know.'"

"But often means:"

"I need this to be true."

"I was taught this as a child."

"My community requires this."

"My identity depends upon this."

"I fear the consequences if this is false."

"I have repeated this so often that repetition feels like evidence."

The student asked,

"How can I know whether I truly know?"

The teacher answered,

"You cannot solve the problem once and forever."

"Then what can I do?"

"Remain correctable."

The Certainty of the Heretic

The renewed Gospel warned that rejecting orthodoxy did not automatically produce freedom.

A person could leave one rigid religion and create another.

A person could reject one infallible scripture and discover an infallible secret Gospel.

A person could reject bishops and become his own pope.

A person could reject dogma and become dogmatic about having no dogma.

A person could discover Gnosticism and immediately divide humanity into enlightened insiders and worthless outsiders.

The teacher said,

"The archon does not care which vocabulary you use."

"It cares whether you remain asleep."

The Sixth Veil: Separation

The sixth veil was separation.

The student asked,

"Is separation an illusion?"

The teacher answered,

"Some forms are."

"Are you and I the same person?"

"No."

"Then difference is real."

"Yes."

"Then what is illusion?"

"Imagining that difference means independence."

The teacher pointed toward a tree.

"Does the tree exist independently of soil?"

"No."

"Water?"

"No."

"Sunlight?"

"No."

"Air?"

"No."

"Other life?"

"No."

"Then where is the independent tree?"

The student answered,

"There is still a tree."

"Yes."

"Then relation does not destroy distinction."

"No."

The teacher smiled.

"Now you understand part of the Bridal Chamber."

The Bridal Chamber of Difference

The Bridal Chamber was not the destruction of all distinction.

It was the end of alienation created by false separation.

The Nazarene had taught:

"Two may become one without one destroying the other."

A student asked,

"How?"

"Through relationship."

"That sounds ordinary."

"It is."

"Then why use mystical language?"

"Because people often fail to see the mystery of the ordinary."

The teacher continued,

"Love without possession."

"Community without conformity."

"Difference without domination."

"Solitude without isolation."

"Identity without imprisonment."

"Union without absorption."

"These are doors of the Bridal Chamber."

The Seventh Veil: Spiritual Pride

The seventh veil was the most subtle.

Spiritual pride.

The teacher said,

"The first six veils may become material for the seventh."

The student asked,

"How?"

"You overcome fear and become proud of your courage."

"You simplify desire and become proud of your discipline."

"You see through identity and become proud of having no ego."

"You question authority and become proud of your independence."

"You accept uncertainty and become proud of your intellectual humility."

"You experience unity and become proud of your nonduality."

The student laughed.

"Then there is no escape."

The teacher smiled.

"That conclusion can also become pride."

The student covered his face.

The teacher laughed.

"Now you understand why the Nazarene had a sense of humor."

The Pneumatic Narcissist

The renewed communities used the term pneumatic narcissism for a particular spiritual danger.

The pneumatic narcissist believed himself spiritually superior because he had discovered hidden teachings.

He divided humanity into categories.

He placed himself at the top.

He called others asleep.

Hylic.

NPC.

Soulless.

Material.

Unworthy.

He interpreted disagreement as evidence of lower consciousness.

He treated compassion as weakness.

He used cosmology to justify contempt.

The teacher said,

"Such a person has learned the vocabulary of Seth while serving Yaldabaoth."

The student asked,

"How can we recognize this in ourselves?"

"Notice how much pleasure you receive from imagining others inferior."

The Seven Veils Together

The student asked,

"Are the seven veils separate?"

"No."

Fear creates desire for certainty.

Certainty hardens identity.

Identity seeks authority that confirms it.

Authority produces separation between insiders and outsiders.

Separation produces fear.

And spiritual pride crowns the entire structure.

The student said,

"Then the archons form a system."

"Yes."

"How do we destroy it?"

The teacher answered,

"Why do you immediately imagine destruction?"

"Because it is a prison."

"Some prisons must be dismantled."

"Then?"

"But hatred of the prison can reproduce the logic of imprisonment."

The student asked,

"What did the Nazarene teach?"

"See."

"Understand."

"Refuse."

"Transform."

"Build differently."

The Inner Demiurge

The teacher drew another circle in the dust.

Inside it he wrote:

MY WORLD.

He said,

"The inner Demiurge creates a model of reality."

"Is that bad?"

"No. The mind requires models."

"Then what is the error?"

"It forgets that the model is a model."

The teacher continued,

"The mind says:"

"I understand this person completely."

"I know why they acted."

"I know what kind of person they are."

"I know how history works."

"I know what God wants."

"I know who is awake."

"I know who is lost."

"I know myself."

The student asked,

"Should we know nothing?"

"No."

"Then what?"

"Know without pretending that the map has become the territory."

The Archon of Trauma

One of the renewed teachers added another warning.

Pain could become an archon.

Not because suffering was imaginary.

Not because wounded people were responsible for what happened to them.

But because the mind could organize an entire identity around injury.

The teacher said,

"Something happened to you."

"That is history."

"You formed meanings around what happened."

"That is interpretation."

"Your body learned responses."

"That is conditioning."

"Others may have harmed you."

"That is responsibility."

"But none of these statements means the wound must become your eternal name."

A student asked,

"Can healing erase the past?"

"No."

"Then what does healing do?"

"It changes the relationship between the past and the present."

The Archon of Revenge

The Nazarene had known injustice.

He had been arrested.

Beaten.

Condemned.

Nearly executed.

Forced into exile.

Misrepresented after his departure.

Yet the hidden Gospel did not portray him as free from anger.

He had felt anger.

He had struggled with what happened.

But he taught that revenge promised false resurrection.

The injured ego imagined:

If my enemy suffers, I will be restored.

The Nazarene answered:

No amount of another person's pain can make the past not happen.

Justice may be necessary.

Protection may be necessary.

Restitution may be necessary.

Resistance may be necessary.

But revenge and restoration were not identical.

The Archon of Despair

Another veil appeared beneath all the others.

Despair.

The belief that awakening was impossible.

The belief that systems could never change.

The belief that people were permanently what conditioning had made them.

The belief that cruelty was the deepest truth of existence.

The teacher said,

"Despair sometimes disguises itself as intelligence."

The student asked,

"How?"

"It says: I am realistic because I expect nothing."

"Is hope always wise?"

"No."

"Then what is the alternative?"

"Possibility without guarantee."

The student asked,

"Is that enough?"

"It must be."

"Why?"

"Because guarantees are unavailable."

The Nazarene's Hope

The Nazarene did not promise that everyone would awaken.

He taught that everyone possessed the possibility.

This distinction mattered.

A student asked,

"Why not promise universal awakening?"

"Because possibility is not inevitability."

"Then some may remain asleep."

"Yes."

"Forever?"

The teacher answered,

"Do not make eternity from one night."

The student recognized the saying.

"The Nazarene said that."

"Yes."

"What did he mean?"

The teacher smiled.

"Continue examining it."

The Method of Liberation

The student finally asked,

"Give me a method."

The teacher answered,

"Observe."

"What?"

"Conditioning."

"Then?"

"Understand."

"Then?"

"Interrupt."

"Then?"

"Replace."

"With what?"

"More skillful conditions."

"Then?"

"Observe again."

The student looked disappointed.

"That is all?"

The teacher asked,

"Were you expecting a secret word?"

"Perhaps."

"Would you like one?"

The student's eyes widened.

"Yes."

The teacher leaned close and whispered:

"Pay attention."

The student stared at him.

"That is the secret word?"

"No."

"What is?"

"That was the instruction."

The Seven Practices

The renewed communities associated one practice with each veil.

Against fear: courageous examination.

Against compulsive desire: simplicity.

Against rigid identity: self-inquiry.

Against authoritarian dependence: discernment.

Against false certainty: intellectual humility.

Against separation: compassionate relationship.

Against spiritual pride: service.

The student asked,

"Will these practices guarantee awakening?"

"No."

"Why practice them?"

"Because they make certain forms of sleep less stable."

"Can practice become another prison?"

"Yes."

"Can discipline become ego?"

"Yes."

"Can humility become performance?"

"Yes."

The student sighed.

The teacher laughed.

"You continue searching for a method that cannot be misused."

"Does one exist?"

"No method survives unconsciousness automatically."

The Solar Practice

At dawn, the renewed communities sometimes practiced remembrance of the Solar Seth.

They did not worship the physical sun.

They faced the sunrise as symbol.

The teacher said,

"Before the sun appears, the world is not nonexistent."

"It is unseen."

"Ignorance does not always mean reality is absent."

"It may mean the conditions of seeing are absent."

The student asked,

"Is Seth the sun?"

"No."

"Is Jesus the sun?"

"No."

"Then why the symbol?"

"Because light reveals without carrying away what it reveals."

The student asked,

"What should I contemplate?"

The teacher answered,

"Where in your life have you mistaken inability to see for absence?"

The Descent Through the Archons

The ancient Gospels had spoken of ascent beyond the rulers.

The renewed Gospel also spoke of descent.

The student asked,

"Why descend?"

"Because some people use spirituality to flee the world."

"Is escape always wrong?"

"No."

"Then what is descent?"

"Returning after insight."

The teacher continued,

"You see through identity."

"Then return to relationship."

"You experience silence."

"Then return to speech."

"You understand emptiness."

"Then return to compassion."

"You see the constructed nature of institutions."

"Then help build better ones."

"You recognize the impermanence of the body."

"Then care for bodies."

"You understand that wealth cannot complete you."

"Then use resources wisely."

The student asked,

"Is this the Bridal Chamber?"

"Part of it."

The Gnostic Who Returned

The teacher told a parable.

"A man escaped a burning city."

"He climbed a mountain."

"From the summit he saw that the city was burning."

"He said, 'I am enlightened, because I see the fire.'"

"He remained upon the mountain."

"A second person climbed after him."

"She saw the same fire."

"Then she returned to warn those still sleeping."

The student asked,

"Which one had gnosis?"

The teacher answered,

"Both saw."

"Only one understood what seeing required."

The Final Archon

The student asked,

"What is the final archon?"

The teacher answered,

"The one who asks to become final."

"I do not understand."

"The mind wants the final system."

"The final teacher."

"The final scripture."

"The final identity."

"The final state."

"The final explanation."

"The final victory."

The student asked,

"Is there no completion?"

"Conditioned processes complete."

"Books end."

"Bodies die."

"Tasks finish."

"But the desire to possess a final conceptual standpoint outside all uncertainty is another form of Yaldabaoth."

The student asked,

"Then even this Gospel is incomplete?"

"Yes."

"Even the teachings of the Nazarene?"

"Yes."

"Even Sethian cosmology?"

"Yes."

"Even apophatic theology?"

The teacher smiled.

"Especially when apophatic theology becomes proud of having no concepts."

Beyond the Seven Veils

The student remained with the teacher for many years.

Eventually he returned and asked the same question with which he had begun.

"Where are the archons?"

The teacher answered,

"Where have you looked?"

The student smiled.

"In heaven."

"In governments."

"In religions."

"In markets."

"In machines."

"In communities."

"In teachers."

"In enemies."

"In myself."

The teacher asked,

"And where did you find them?"

"Everywhere."

The teacher shook his head.

The student was surprised.

"Was I wrong?"

"Partly."

"What did I miss?"

"If you see only archons everywhere, the concept itself has become an archon."

The student laughed.

"Then where are they?"

The teacher answered,

"Where domination becomes unconscious and claims necessity."

"And where is the Light?"

"Wherever that claim becomes visible."

The Stranger Passes Through

The renewed Gospel therefore taught neither paranoia nor passivity.

Not every event was a conspiracy.

Not every authority was demonic.

Not every institution was evil.

Not every desire was corruption.

Not every identity was imprisonment.

Not every fear was cowardice.

Not every certainty was delusion.

Not every spiritual experience was awakening.

The path required discrimination.

This was why the Nazarene had refused simple answers.

The Stranger did not awaken by replacing one automatic worldview with another.

He passed through the veils.

Fear arose, but did not become master.

Desire arose, but did not define completion.

Identity functioned, but did not become absolute.

Authority served, but did not possess conscience.

Knowledge operated, but remained correctable.

Difference remained, but separation weakened.

Spiritual practice continued, but superiority was exposed.

The student asked,

"What remains after the veils fall?"

The teacher answered,

"Do not imagine a person standing behind them."

"Then who is liberated?"

The teacher smiled.

"Continue."

The student closed his eyes.

For a moment he saw the trap.

He had imagined liberation as the final possession of a self.

A perfected self.

An immortal self.

A spiritual self.

A pneumatic self.

A Sethian self.

A Christ-self.

But the Nazarene had taught something more difficult.

The Christ-state was not the glorification of the prisoner's identity.

It was awakening from the prisoner's mistaken certainty about what he was.

The student opened his eyes.

The sun was rising.

He asked,

"Is this resurrection?"

The teacher answered,

"While living."

"Is this Christ?"

"If you must use the word."

"Is this Seth?"

"If the symbol helps."

"Is this the Nameless Source?"

The teacher shook his head.

"No."

"Then what is the Source?"

The teacher looked toward the light.

And said nothing.